CHAPTER 2
Verbs and Verbal Phrases

2.1 Basic Grammatical Categories in Verbs

A VERBAL PHRASE (abbreviated VP) is a word or sequence of words serving in typical functions of a verb, such as forming the nucleus of a clause (the PREDICATION) or of a participial phrase. Every VP must contain a verb as its nucleus, which in turn may be preceded by verbal proclitics and followed by one or more complements. VERBAL PROCLITICS may mark negation, mood, aspect, or tense. Complements may be verbal, adverbial or nominal.

The VERB is that part of speech which forms the nucleus of a predication, exhibiting grammatical distinctions in person, number, mood, tense, and voice. The verb typically denotes an action, state, or changed state in a subject, although verbs used as auxiliaries or semi-auxiliaries have largely lost such a direct semantic connection with the subject, and other verbs are used without any external subject at all.

FINITE verbs exhibit the characteristic grammatical distinctions of person, number, voice, mood, and tense that typify verbs. The form of a finite verb itself reflects the distinctions in person and number of its subject. In addition, pronominal clitics attached to a verb, finite or non-finite, may indicate the person and number of its object (for transitive verbs only) or referent (for any verb).
### Table 2.1 Verb Grammatical Categories and their Abbreviations

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PERSON</th>
<th>NUMBER</th>
<th>VOICE</th>
<th>MOOD</th>
<th>TENSE</th>
<th>TIME</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>S(in)g(ular)</td>
<td>Act(ive)</td>
<td>Ind(icate)</td>
<td>Com(mon)</td>
<td>Pres(ent)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>Pl(ural)</td>
<td>Non-act(ive)</td>
<td>Sub(junctive)</td>
<td>Perf(ect)</td>
<td>Past</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td></td>
<td>Pass(ive)</td>
<td>Cond(itional)</td>
<td>Prog(ressive)</td>
<td>Fut(ure)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Mid(dle)</td>
<td>Jus(sive)</td>
<td>Inch(otive)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Def(inite)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Imperf(ect)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**FINITE**

**MOOD**
- Ind(icate)
- Sub(junctive)
- Cond(itional)
- Jus(sive)
- Opt(ative)
- Adm(irative)
- Imp(erative)

**ASPECT**
- Com(mon)
- Perf(ect)
- Prog(ressive)
- Inch(otive)
- Def(inite)
- Imperf(ect)

**TIME**
- Pres(ent)
- Past
- Fut(ure)

**NON-FINITE**

**PART(ICIPE)**
- Inf(initive)
- Ger(undive)
- Abs(olutive)

The CITATION FORM of a verb is normally its first person, singular number, active voice, indicative mood, present time, common aspect form. In discussing a verb form that form is assumed to have these same grammatical values, except as specified otherwise. Thus if the form *thua* ‘you say’ is identified just as 2nd person, the implication is that it is also active, indicative, present, and common; the form *u bëftë* ‘may it be done’, must be specified as 3rd Non-Act Perf, but we may leave unspecified that it is also Sg Ind Pres.

**NOTE**

Although the citation form for verbs is generally its first person singular present active indicative form (e.g., *shkoj* ‘I go’), verbs that occur only in non-active forms are cited in the first person singular present non-active indicative form (e.g., *kollem* ‘I cough’). A few verbs occur only in third person forms and they are cited in the third person singular present indicative (active or non-active, depending on the verb) form.

Time and aspect are conventionally treated together as TENSE; *pë pres* ‘I am waiting’ is thus said to be in the present progressive tense. Since the English and Albanian verbal systems do not correspond point by point, the English gloss (given between ‘ ’) following the Albanian...
form) is, of course, always approximate at best. For example, shkoje may be glossed as 'you used to go', but the gloss does not indicate that the "you" here is singular, that the imperfect tense form could just as well be translated as 'went' or 'were going' or 'would go' in the proper context, or that the verb itself could in context be more accurately translated as 'pass' or 'leave' or 'go away'. The reader cannot be guaranteed consistency in the glossing for any particular word, therefore, since the context in which it is used or imagined may change during the discussion.

Verbs are typically thought of as single words, but in Albanian one or more proclitics and auxiliaries may precede the main verb and the whole sequence is then still referred to as "the verb"; many of the conjugational forms of a verb are thus formed with proclitics and/or auxiliaries:

Future: DO TË shkojë 'I shall go'
Progressive: PO shkojë 'I was going'
Subjunctive: TË shkojë 'that I go'
Conditional: DO TË shkojë 'I would go'
Perfect: KÂM shkuar 'I have gone'.
Non-active Past Definite: U lava 'I was washed'
Infinitive: PËR TË shkuar 'to go'
Jussive: LE TË shkojmë 'let's go'
Gerundive: DUKE shkuar '(while) going'

Sometimes the action of a clause is expressed by means of a locution, or word sequence, generally consisting of a verb and another full word (usually an adverb or a noun in a frozen form): e.g., bëj ballë 'I face ('I make forehead')', bëj pallë 'I relax ('I make a sword')', bëj zë 'I make sound', bëj fil 'I sacrifice myself', (ma) ka ënda 'I like ('pleasure has it for me')', marr parasysh 'I consider ('I take before eyes')', marr pjesë 'I participate ('I take part')', marr vesh 'I understand ('I take ear')', ngre krye 'I rebel ('I raise head')', ngre lart 'I lift up', ngre peshë 'I raise up ('I lift weight')', vë re 'I notice ('I put new')', vë dhjamë 'I put (on) weight ('fat')', vë mish 'I put (on) weight ('meat')', zë besë 'I pledge ('I grasp faith')', etc. Such word sequences are equivalent to a single word, and on occasion they can be replaced by one: zë besë = besoj, bëj ballë = përballoj, vë re = vërej, etc. Such locations are grammatically fixed. While the verb itself varies to indicate grammatical distinctions for the location, the other element, which provides most of its lexical meaning, is grammatically frozen.

2.1.1 Person

The grammatical category of person distinguishes between the speaker of an utterance, those spoken to, and those spoken about. Albanian verbs, like English ones, distinguish three persons—FIRST (= I/we), SECOND (= you), THIRD (= he, she, it, they)—and two numbers—SINGULAR and PLURAL (= we, you, they). The ending of a FINITE verb reflects the person and number of the subject of the verb, and the verb is said to be in the person and number of its SUBJECT. In addition, a TRANSITIVE verb may have a clitic attached that indicates the person and number of its OBJECT (= direct object); and any verb, finite or non-finite, transitive or intransitive, may have a clitic attached that indicates the person and number of a REFERENT (approximately = indirect object). Certain verb forms may have the REFLEXIVE object clitic ë attached, which indicates that the subject and object of the verb are not distinguished from each other. The specific endings used in Albanian to indicate the person and number of verb subjects will be discussed below in the sections treating the conjugation of verbs.

As in other European languages, second person plural forms may be used in addressing a single person, if the speaker wishes to express politeness. Such use would normally be inappropriate, for example, to address intimate friends or relatives, children or animals.
Verbs and Verbal Phrases

Chapter 2

A. Pronominal Clitics

While endings on the verb indicate the person and number of the subject of the verb, unstressed PRONOMINAL CLITICS are used to indicate the person and number of the object and/or referent of a verb. Even non-finite verbs (those that do not indicate a subject) may have pronominal clitics. In Table 2.2 notice that in the third person, referents are distinguished from objects, while for the first and second persons the same form is used for both referent and object clitic.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Table 2.2 Pronominal Clitics</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Referent</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Singular</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st person</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd person</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd person</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plural</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st person</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd person</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd person</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reflexive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Any person and number</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Often two clitics are used together, the first denoting the referent, the second denoting a third person object. Most of these combinations have undergone phonetic and orthographic changes, resulting in the dropping of the ē in mē and tē, the appearance of a instead of e (and i) in some forms, and certain other changes (see Table 2.3).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Table 2.3 Combination of Pronominal Clitics</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Referent</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st Sg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd Sg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd Sg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st Pl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd Pl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd Pl</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

NOTES

1. Similar changes occur when pronominal clitics follow the conjunctive clitic tē. The combination tē + e becomes ta; before any other clitic beginning in j or a vowel, tē becomes t'. TA mēṣōsh mirē ‘that you learn IT well’, T'U shkrush lešār famiglijes ‘that you [TO THEM] write to the family’, T'U thuash qē jemī mirē ‘that you tell THEM we’re fine’, do T'ju shkruaj lešār ‘I will write TO YOU’, M'U lavdērua ‘he bragged (“praised himself”) TO ME’, T'U lavdērua ‘he bragged TO YOU’. Other combinations of tē with pronominal clitics and their combinations are:

2.1.1 A. Pronominal Clitics
### Chapter 2

#### Verbs and Verbal Phrases

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Conjunctive Clitic</th>
<th>Pronominal Clitic(s)</th>
<th>Combination</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>të</td>
<td>më</td>
<td>të më</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ma</td>
<td>të ma</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>m‘i</td>
<td>të m‘i</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>të</td>
<td>të</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ta</td>
<td>të ta</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>t‘i</td>
<td>të t‘i</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e</td>
<td>ta</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i</td>
<td>t‘i</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ia</td>
<td>t‘ia</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na</td>
<td>të na</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na e</td>
<td>të na e</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na l</td>
<td>të na l</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ju</td>
<td>t‘ju</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jua</td>
<td>t‘jua</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u</td>
<td>t‘u</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ua</td>
<td>t‘ua</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2. In colloquial Albanian, the non-standard form i is often used instead of the standard form u to mark a third person plural referent:

Pionierët I (instead of U) dhuruan miqve buqeta me lule. ‘The pioneers [i.e. boy scouts] presented bouquets of flowers TO their friends.’

Similarly, the non-standard form u is used in place of the standard form ju to mark a second person referent:

Juve U dhashë të dreqtë. ‘I agreed with YOU.’ in place of Juve JU dhashë të dreqtë.

U mbledhëm dhe, si diskutuam, vendosëm t‘U (instead of t‘JU) shkruajmë me shpresa se do t‘U (instead of t‘JU) vijë pak keq. ‘We convened and, after discussing things, decided to write to YOU, in the hope that YOU will feel some slight compassion.’

3. The combinations i + e and i + i are written ia in proclitic position. But in enclitic positions ia is written with j instead of i: jepja, merrja.

4. Especially in colloquial narrative, a verb may be preceded by the frozen proclitic form më or the frozen clitic combination më të to signify the approval or interest of the speaker in what is sometimes called the "ethical dative" relation. Since the verb itself may be preceded by other pronominal clitics in such cases, the effect may be to produce a sequence of two or three apparent referent proclitics:

Pas tlj, MË T‘IU përvesh prapë Vasilë ynpë. ‘After him, our Vasil really ("FOR ME FOR YOU FOR HIM") went at him again.

Po të paskan tharë krahët që MË IU thafë ajo gjuhë M‘IU thafë! ‘May that tongue of his shrivel up, for they have beaten you black and blue. ("But they have really dried up your arms, so may that tongue FOR ME FOR HIM be dried up").’

### A.1 Clitic Position

Pronominal clitics may appear before verb forms of any tense and mood (for the special position with imperative verbs see below):

Unë i them se MË MERR mali dhe ajo MË VESHTRON me dhëmshuri dhe tund kokën. ‘I tell her that I get nostalgic ("nostalgia TAKES ME’), and she LOOKS AT ME with compassion and shakes her head.’

MË PAÇ në qafë, po MA PUNOVE si radhën e parë. ‘I’ll be damned if I’ll let you do that to me again ("MAY YOU HAVE ME in neck if YOU WORKED ME like the first time").’

Mos më vono se po MË PRET im atë. ‘Don’t make me late because my father is EXPECTing ME.’

### 2.1.1 A.1 Clitic Position

25
When a pronominal clitic or combination of clitics is used with verb constructions with the formative particles tê ‘to’, do tê ‘will’, për tê ‘to’, duke ‘by’, pa ‘without’, etc., it appears between the particle and the verb:

Stavrë shtru-krahët-për-t’IU-hedhur-t’et nê qafë dhe u mat tê-thërisiste. ‘Stavrë stretched out his arms to embrace (‘throw HIMSELF TO HIM in the neck’) his father, and almost cried out.’

Pa E bërë tê qatë, shpalosi tantellën e përthyer tê këmishës. ‘Cutting it short (‘without making IT long’), he unfolded the pleated lace of his shirt.’

With imperative mood verbs, however, pronominal clitics have two possible positions. When the verb is in the negative imperative, the pronominal clitics always appear between the negative particle and the verb:

-- Mos MË shiko ashtu sikur nuk kupton, -- foll Argoni, -- po hajde ta tokim, se kemi qenë miq dhe miq e shokë do tê jemi gjer nê fund. ‘Don’t look AT ME as if you do not understand me,” Agron spoke, "but let’s shake hands, for we’ve been friends, and friends and comrades we shall be to the end.”

Mos MA thuaj atë fjalë, Bardha. ‘Don’t say that word TO ME, Bardha.’

With imperative verbs, only pronominal proclitics and combinations of the first, third, and reflexive persons are used. In the positive imperative these proclitics may appear before or after the verb (except for the clitic e, which rarely precedes the verb stem in positive imperatives). In the positive plural imperative they usually precede the stem; but they may also appear as enclitics, coming between the stem and the ending, and that whole sequence is written as a single word: NA thonë ‘tell US’, NA shkruani ‘write US’, MË shkruani ‘write ME’, shkruAMëni ‘write ME’; MË thuaj ‘tell ME’, thuajMë, tê lutem ‘tell ME, please’; MA hap derën ‘open the door for ME’, hapMA derën ‘open the door for me (‘open IT FOR ME the door’).

A.2 Uses of Pronominal Clitics

In general, the appearance of a pronominal clitic indicates that the verb has a direct or indirect object. Whenever the verb has an indirect object, a referent clitic in the same person and number as that object must appear, whether or not that indirect object is present in the sentence.

Kur t’I skruash (atij) I bëj tê faala. ‘When you write TO HIM, give HIM my regards.’

-- Kjo, -- tha, MA mbush zemrën me gëzim tê madh. ‘This,” he said, "fills MY heart with great joy.”

Tani nê fillim do tê TË dhembë pak, njësoj sikur tê priteshe padashur me brisk, po pastaj do ta kesh më lehtë se vendi do tê mphihet vetvetiu. ‘At first it will hurt YOU a little, just do cutting yourself unwittingly with a razor, but later it will be easier on you, because the place will become numb automatically.’

Kështu na kishte ndodhur edhe nê Zgërdhesh, me tê vetmin ndryshim se atje, kur pushonin, shhatafër NA sillnin grushë me kumbulla, kurse këtu nisën tê NA sjellin grushë me mana. ‘This is what happened to us in Zgërdhesh as well, the only difference being that over there, when the peasants took a break, they would bring US handfuls of plums, whereas here they began to bring US handfuls of mulberries.’

If the indirect object is present in the sentence, it is expressed as a noun or pronoun in the dative case. In Albanian, indirect objects indicate the involvement of the noun or pronoun with the clause in some relation other than as subject or object. It thus has a far wider use than indirect objects in English:

-- E ç’më duhet! -- ia priti Blerta, SË CILËS, nê atë gjendje shpirtërore që ishte, nuk mund t’I pëlqente një gjë e tillë. ‘What use is it to me!” shot back Blerta, TO WHOM, considering the spiritual state she was in such a thing could not be pleasing (FOR HER).’

KËTYRE, xha Vangjel, -- iu përgjeg Viktoria, U lipsen shumë dërrasa, jo vetëm një.
"FOR THESE, uncle Vangjel," replied Viktoria, "many slabs, not just one are needed (FOR THEM)."

The referent clitics of the first and second person singular and first person plural are also used, especially in colloquial Albanian, to indicate the emotional involvement of the speaker in the action of the clause, rather than a syntactic relationship to the verb:

Pa MË T’u bë ai fiku sa një shëpëri e madhe e pa MË T’I bënte ato kokrrat na...sa një ftua. ‘That fig tree just grew ("FOR ME FOR YOU") as big as a house, and produced ("FOR ME FOR YOU THEM") figs, wow...the size of a quince.’

Nëno maj, mbaj zë përrëvellanë/ me tre plumba NA I ranë/ Na e vran e na e shanë/ Na i thanë tradhëtarë. ‘Mother/mourn for our brother/ with three bullets they killed him ("FOR US TO HIM they fell")/ They killed him and insulted him/ They called him traitor.’

The pronominal clitics of the first and second person must be used when the verb has a first or second person direct or indirect object, whether or not that object is also expressed elsewhere in the sentence:

Unë i them se MË merr malli dhe ajo MË vështron me dhembshuri dhe tund kokën. ‘I tell her that I become nostalgic ("nostalgia takes ME"), and she looks at ME with compassion and shakes her head.’

When the speaker wants to emphasize the object, a pronoun in the appropriate case is used, usually either before the pronominal clitic or after the verb:

Përse i bëna të gjitha këto? Sepse koha NA mësoi NE e TÊ mësoi TY shumë gjëra. ‘Why are you doing all these things? Because time taught US and taught YOU many things.’

Fundja, NA ke dhe NE këtu. ‘After all, you have US too here.’

The pronominal third person object clitics may or may not appear when the verb has a third person direct object expressed by a noun, pronoun or dependent clause, but must appear if the verb has an object otherwise unexpressed. In general, the presence of a third person object clitic e or i implies that the identity of the direct object is known to the audience:

Shumë nga kooperativistët E dinin që ishte njeri i mirë prandaj E donin. ‘Many of the cooperativists knew (IT) that he was a good man, so they liked HIM.’

Ç’kërkon? -- E pyeti përsëri burri me gjizlykë duke i hedhur të porsaardhurit një vështrim të dhishtimë. ‘What do you want?’ the man with eyeglasses asked HIM again, casting a suspicious glance at the newcomer.’

Sikur të mos ishte përzhitja e zgjirit, që IA pati bërë FAQET lulukuq, as ajo vetë s’do të dinte ku TA fustë FYTYRËN. ‘Wore it not for the scorching fire, which had made [THEM FOR HER] HER CHEEKS red as poppies, she herself wouldn’t have known where TO hide [IT] HER FACE.’

Ti e di SE PËR KU ÉSHTË NISUR NËNA, ndaj mos pyet. ‘You know WHERE MOTHER IS HEADED FOR, so don’t ask.’

SE ÇKA ME MUA, as unë s’E di. ‘WHY HE IS PEEVED AT ME, even I don’t know [IT].’

When a form of të gjithë ‘all’ or të tërë ‘all’ is the direct object, an object clitic is required:

Dajë Kurti i di TÊ GJITHA. ‘Uncle Kurti knows EVERYTHING ("knows THEM ALL").’

Pastaj partizanët I nxuarrën TÊ TÈRA. ‘Then the partisans brought THEM ALL out.’

Ja I ke TÊ GJITHË nëpër tavolina, në valle, te banaku i butesë. ‘There, THEY are ("you have THEM") ALL at the tables, dancing, at the buffet counter.’

Note that the third person object clitic is not used when the direct object, bearing the phrase accent to indicate that it conveys new information, is not expected to be identifiable to the audience:

2.1.1 A.2 Uses of Prounomincl Clitics
Ngjarja është kaq domethënëse, kaq intersante dhe kaq për të qeshur, saqë dua të jap këtu jo RRËFIMIN e saj, po PËRFYTIRIMIN tim, aq e gjallë më ka mbetur në mendje. 'The event is so significant, so interesting, and so funny that I want to give here not its NARRATION, but my VISION of it, so vivid has it remained in my mind.'
Ke thënë taman MENDIMIN, që kum edhe unë. 'You have expressed exactly THE OPINION that I [too] have.'
S'jeml parë, qëkur thanim KËNETËN e Maligj. 'We haven't seen each other since we were draining THE Maliqi SWAMP.'

B. Unipersonal Verbs
The majority of verbs may be used in all three persons, but there are also quite a few which are used only in the third person.

B.1 Verbs Designating Animal Action
Verbs that name an action characteristic of a particular animal are normally used only in the third person: hingëlën ‘neighs’ (horse), hunron ‘growls’ (wolf or dog), kakarit ‘cackles’ (chicken), mjaulën ‘meows’ (cat), pëllët ‘brays’ (donkey).

B.2 Impersonal Verbs
Verbs that indicate natural or atmospheric phenomena have a third person subject either expressed or understood: bie ‘falls’ (e.g., rain, snow), fryn ‘blows’ (e.g., wind, blizzard), bëron ‘sprouts, turns green’ (e.g., field, meadow), gjëlberon ‘turns green’ (e.g., grass), ushton ‘rumbles, echoes’ (e.g., canyon).

Several verbs (in the singular only) or verbal expressions which name atmospheric phenomena have the third person subject neither expressed nor understood: vetëtën ‘it flashes, it lightens’, bubullën ‘it thunders’, veson ‘it dews’, bën ftohtë ‘it is (‘makes’) cool’, bën freskët ‘it is cool’, bën ngrohtë ‘it is warm’, etc.

B.3 Verbs with Pseudo Subjects
Verbs with a pseudo third person singular subject have their underlying subject expressed, if at all, in the dative case: (s’më) hësobët ‘(I don’t) believe (it)’, (më) hëhet ‘it makes (me)’, dukët ‘it seems’, (s’më) kujtëhet ‘(I don’t) recall (‘it is not recalled to me’)’, ndodh ‘it happens’, (më) pëlqen ‘it is pleasing (to me)’, (l) like (it)’, qëllët ‘it happens’, rastis ‘it chances, it happens’:

KISH QËLLUAR që ish agritur edhe nga dasma, kurse sot s’po luante nga vendi. ‘IT HAD HAPPENED that he had even left the wedding, whereas today he was not budging from his place.
Nganhëherë NDODH që njerëzit të njihen aty për aty e të lidhen me njëri-tjërrin. Sometimes IT HAPPENS that people become acquainted right away and create a bond.
Tashët jam si në ëndërr, S’MË BESOHET që po shëtit me ty e po flas. ‘It’s as if I am dreaming now, I CAN’T BELIEVE that I am strolling with you and talking.’
Pa dale, pa dale: M’U DUK se pashe një cep gune, M’U DUK se nga drina kërceu dëcka e zezë. ‘Wait, wait! I thought (‘IT SEEMED TO ME’) I saw the corner of a cloak, I THOUGHT something black jumped out of the brush.’

Several transitive verbs, such as di ‘know’, leloj ‘permit’, ndaloj ‘forbid’, them ‘say’, may also occur with pseudo third person singular subjects, when used in non-active forms:
DIHET që pengesa e papiitur është gjithmonë e kejaj. ‘IT IS KNOWN that the unexpected obstacle is always the bad one.’
FLITET se ato do t'i nxjerrin jashtë përdorimit armët e tjera. 'IT IS SAID that they will make all other arms obsolete.'

Atëherë MERRET ME MEND se kjo do të jetë më tepër një kacavjerrie e mundimshme se sa një futurim i rrufeshëm. 'Then it is obvious (IT IS TAKEN WITH MIND) that this will be more of a laborious climb than a lightning flight'.

Nuk KUPTOHEJ nëse ata sprapshin apo pregatiteshin të sulmonin. 'One could not tell (THERE WAS NOT UNDERSTANDING) whether they were retreating or preparing to attack.'

PARASHIKOHET që sulmet e tyre të ardhshme të jenë akoma më të egra dhe më të dëshpëruara. 'IT IS EXPECTED that their future assaults will be even fiercer and more desperate.'

The verbs jam ‘I am’, vij ‘I come’, shkoj ‘I go’, dal ‘I emerge’, etc., are used with pseudo third person singular subjects in expressions like (s') éshhtë mirë ‘(no) good! (‘is(n’t) well”)’, (s') éshhtë keq ‘(not) bad! (‘is(n’t) bad”)’, (s') éshhtë e arsryshme ‘(that's) (not) reasonable”, (s’) éshhtë e udhës ‘(that's) (not) proper (“of the road”), etc.; më vjen mbare ‘suits me (“to me it comes prosperous”), më vjen mirë (keq) ‘I'm glad (sorry) ("to me it comes good (bad)"); (s’) më shkol ndër mend ‘it did(n’t) occur to me (“not to me went through mind”), më doli nga mendja ‘I forgot ("to me went out from the mind")’:

Pastaj ktheu mendje dhe instinktivisht e ndjelu se ISH E UDHËS ta merrte me të mirë. ‘Then he changed his mind and instinctively sensed that IT WAS APPROPRIATE to be nice to him.’

MË VJEN KEQ të ta them, shoku Rakip, por ti po bëhesh pengesë për realizimin e planit. ‘I REGRET to tell you, comrade Rakip, but you are becoming an obstacle to the realization of the plan.’

Dhe në përgjithshëm atij NUK I ERDHI MIRË që u ngjitur në mes të fsatat. ‘And in general he did not like it ("NOT CAME TO HIM GOOD") that they ascended to the midst of the village.’

Atyre NUK U SHKONTE KURRË NDËR MEND se ky do të ishte shoku i tyre dhe do të qeshte e do të bënte potere si ata. ‘It never occurred to them ("NOT to them WOULD IT NEVER GO THROUGH MIND") that this would be their comrade, who would laugh and get into brawls just like them.’

Duhet and do when used as modals have only their third person singular forms, as if they had a pseudo subject.

B.4 Existential Uses of kam

The verb kam ‘I have’ is used only in third person singular forms to give the sense of the existential there is, there are, there were, etc. in English:

Ata nuk e kuptojnë se politikë KA kudo, në çdo punë e në çdo sektor, se NUK KA kuadro e punë ekonomike, administrative, kulturale e ushtarake të shkëputura nga politika e jashtë politikës së diktaturës së proletariatit. ‘There is (HAS) politics everywhere, in every job and in every sector, that there is NO (”HAS NOT”) cadre and economic, administrative, cultural, and military work divorced from politics, and apart from the politics of the dictatorship of the proletariat.’

KA e S’KA fshatra me kroje, po kroje si ato të Voskopojeve s’gjen gëkundë. ‘There are villages with fountains and without ("THERE ARE and THERE ARE NOT villages with fountains"), but fountains like those of Voskopoja you can’t find anywhere.’

B.5 Impersonal Non-active Intransitive Verbs

Intransitive verbs in third person singular non-active forms are often accompanied by some indication of negation (s' shkohet ‘there's no going’, s'rrihet ‘there's no staying’, s'hyhet ‘there's no entering’, s'rohet ‘there's no living’, s'filhet ‘there's no sleeping’, etc.) or

2.1.1 B.5 Impersonal Non-active Intransitive Verbs
interrogation. They not only represent the action in a general way without specifying a particular subject, but also express modal nuances of possibility or even necessity. Thus këtej s'kalohet means basically the same thing as the sentence Këtej s'mund (or s'dubet) të kalojë njeri—"No one can (should) pass this way'.

Edhe pa këmbë JETOHER. Këshu S'ECET përpara. "Even without feet THERE'S LIVING; THERE'S just NO GOING forward that way.'

Note that a pronominal referent clitic may be attached to verbs of this type to designate obliquely the underlying subject of the verb:

Mlrëpo mua S'MË IKET, kemi shkuar një jetë të tërë këtu, u mësuan. 'Nevertheless, I can't go ("NOT FOR ME IS THERE GOING"), we have lived our whole life here, we've gotten used to it.'

Nga minlërë kishte ikur, kurse në fshat e njënte se NUK I VEHEJ. 'He had left the mine, yet he felt that he could not go ("NOT FOR HIM WAS THERE GOING") to the village.'

Rustemit e mësesit U FLIHEJ. 'Rustem and the teacher were sleepy ("FOR THEM THERE WAS SLEEPING").'

Në kalibe NUK I RRIHEJ vetëm dhe bariste me duar në xhepat e kapotës së gjatë. 'He did not feel like staying ("NOT FOR HIM WAS THERE STAYING") alone in the tent; and (so) he strolled with his hands in the pockets of his long cape.'

Atij atë ditë NUK I PUNOHEJ. 'He did not feel like working ("NOT FOR HIM WAS THERE WORKING") that day.'

Kamarërient NUK IU DURUA më dhe erdhi bashkë me ndihmësin e filloi të mbllidhte pjatat dhe gotat bosh. 'The waiter could not stand it ("FOR HIM THERE WAS NO ENDURING") any longer, and he came over with his helper and began to pick up the empty plates and glasses.'

NOTE

In the phraseological expression s'i bihet murit me koke 'one can't bang one's head against the wall', the verb similarly expresses the action in an impersonal manner:

Na thoshit se NUK I BIHET MURIT ME KOKË, por ne i rañë dhe muri zuri të lëkundej. 'You used to tell us that one can't bang one's head against the wall ("THERE IS NOT HITTING THE WALL WITH HEAD"), but we did it, and the wall began to shake.'

2.1.2 Number

By the NUMBER of a verb we mean the number of its subject, expressed or understood. A verb in the plural thus does not indicate plurality of the action, but rather plurality of the subject.

If the subject is a singular collective noun (see Section 3.2.1.B.1), the verb may appear in the third person plural, if the speaker desires to emphasize the semantic plurality indicated by such nouns.

Bota THONE ashtu se KANE inat. 'People ("the world") talk ("SAY") like that because they are spiteful ("HAVE spite").'

-- E c'nat DO TE KENE bota? -- preti Hakiu. 'But why should people be spiteful ("And what spite WILL the world HAVE")? asked Hakiu.'

Di ëmë c'nat KANE? 'How do I know why they are spiteful? ("Know I what spite THEY HAVE")?'

In these sentences bota is a singular collective subject, and the verb kam appears in plural forms.
Chapter 2

Verbs and Verbal Phrases

When the action named by the verb does not have a designated actor, then the verb is usually used in the third person singular (see previous section), or in the second person singular with a generalized meaning:

\[ \text{Po tē hash perime, do-tē-rrossh-pēr gjithmonē. 'If you eat vegetables, you will live forever.'} \]

2.1.3 Voice

Grammatical voice expresses the agentive relation between the verb and its subject (overly present or understood). This relation is signalled morphologically in Albanian by selecting one of two groups of verbal forms: ACTIVE or NON-ACTIVE. On the basis of which of these groups is used and depending on the agentive relationships that obtain between the verb and its subject, we may distinguish four voices in Albanian: active, middle, passive, and reflexive (and reciprocal, as a special case of the latter).

A. Active Voice

A verb is in the ACTIVE voice when it has an active form and its subject is itself the AGENT, that is, the performer of the action designated by the underlying verb. On the basis of whether they may or may not take a direct object, active voice verbs are labeled transitive or intransitive, respectively.

A.1 Transitive Verbs


Afërëtita, pasi MBAROI letrën, HODHI vështrimin jashtë nga dritarja dhe sytë i ranë mbi kodërën, ku ngërhej shkolla e re. ‘After she FINISHED the letter, Aphrodite CAST a look out the window and her eyes rested (‘fell’) on the hill, where the new school was being built.’

A.2 Intransitive Verbs

INTRANSITIVE verbs designate actions centering on the subject, such as fë e ‘sleep’, dremit ‘doze’, ri ‘stay’, dal ‘emerge’, eci ‘walk’, hyj ‘enter’, shkoj ‘go’, vij ‘come’, vrapoj ‘run’, etc.:

Në qepalla u RËNDONTE gjumi e megjithatë nuk FLININ; nuk FLININ e nuk BISEDONIN, po RRININ të shtirirë rrëzë dy mureve të kasolles, që binte erë kashtë e bar të thatë. ‘Sleep WEIGHED DOWN on their eyelids, but in spite of that they did not TALK, but REMAINED lying down by the two walls of the hut, which smelled of straw and dry grass.’

Nga TÊ KISH ARDHUR ky emër i ri "komisar" që e mbanin këta dy veta, që nuk i zinte gjumi? ‘Where HAD this new title, "commisar", COME from, that these two people who could not sleep held?’

Some verbs which are intransitive in Albanian correspond to verbs which are transitive in English. For example, to say ‘He entered the room.’ Albanian has Hyri në dhomën, literally ‘he entered in the room’. In a number of such instances, the Albanian intransitive verb will have an indirect object in the dative case, indicating that while the action is centered on the subject, it is directed toward the indirect object:

2.1.3 A.2 Intransitive Verbs
Verbs and Verbal Phrases

Korieri u përkul me ndirim dhe I HİPI përsëri kalit. ‘The courier bowed respectfully and mounted ("CLIMBED TO") the horse again.’
Al I RA daulles një copë herë. ‘He played ("FELL TO") the drum for a while.’


Whether a verb is transitive or intransitive depends on its lexical meaning. Since many verbs have more than one meaning, it often happens that a single verb will sometimes be transitive and sometimes intransitive:

Kësh pranverë mezi u ajrit më këmbë, se iu bë djeji varr. Rintë gijthonë shtrirë e atje QANTE dhe e QANIM. ‘This spring he was barely able to get on his feet, because the cradle had become a grave (to him). He stayed in bed and there he WOULD WEEP and we would weep for him (‘and we WENT HIM’).’
Pranë tij SHKOI e ndenjë edhe Flamuri. SHKOI dhe një herë pëllëmbën mbi fytërë e sikur u qetësua. ‘Flamuri, too, WENT and stayed by him. He PASSED his hand once more over his face, and seemed to relax.’
Më merret fryrna, më ndalet zenra, mundohem të kamen pas ajrit, THËRRES. ‘I gasp, my heart stops, I try to clutch at air, I scream ("CALL").’
PO më kot! Zaharia THIRRRI të vetë, por s'pati nevojë t'i THÉRRISTE, se të gjithë tu gjendën aty. ‘But in vain! Zaharia CALLED his own, but he had no need to CALL them, because all of them were there.’
Pëse S'FLE nga pak tani në vapë? ‘Why don’t you SLEEP a bit now at the peak of the day’s heat?’
Eh, more djejm, ruajuni, bre, nga ata që fsihën në hendekë e në driza, mos E FLINI, bre, mendjen! ‘Hey boys, just watch out for those who hide in the ditches and the shrubs; now don’t get complacent ("SLEEP THE MIND")!’

Some intransitive verbs in Albanian (as in English) -- jetoj ‘I live’, fle ‘I sleep’, and a few others -- are sometimes used with a "cognate" object, i.e., a direct object that has the same root as the verb or has a meaning synonymous with that root:

Që të gjithë KISHIN JETUAR JETΪN e tyre, kishin ardhur nga kontinenta e shtete të ndryshme dhe ja tashht po preheshin e po ruhesin të sistemuarra e të registruarra nga dora e një mjeshtri... ‘All of them HAD LIVED their LIFE, had come from different continents and states, and now were quietly being preserved in a manner systematized and registered by a master hand...’
Në dhomën e madhe të hanit dëngjet e mbështetur kurriz më kurriz dukeshin sikur po FLININ edhe ata GJUMAN e rëndë të natës. ‘In the large room of the inn, the bales piled up back to back, seemed as if they too WERE SLEEPING the heavy sleep of the night.’

B. Non-active Voices

Many Albanian verbs have both active and non-active forms. A non-active form may represent action in three voices, depending on the relationships between the underlying agent and object of the verb.

B.1 Middle Voice

A verb is in the MIDDLE voice when it has a non-active form and its subject is the underlying agent. In terms of meaning, a verb in the middle voice is similar to an intransitive verb in the active voice.

Verbs in the middle voice include:


32

2.1.3 B.1 Middle Voice
out, I leave', përdrigijem 'I twist', përqiqem 'I struggle', rrotullohem 'I rotate', sulem 'I attack', vërsolem 'I rush forward', vërtitet 'I whirl, dash, throw myself at', etc.:

U PËRPOQ TÊ NGRHJEJ e të kapte amët dhe dha urdhër t'i galtinën kalin. HE TRIED TO GET UP and grasp his weapons, and ordered that they ready his horse.'

Dhe duhej TÊ NISEJ sa më shtepjt. 'And he had TO LEAVE as soon as possible.'

M'U QEP ky e s'më NDAHET, mendol Memoja. 'He sticks to me like glue ('TO ME THIS IS SEWN and not from me SEPARATES'), Memo thought.'

2) Verbs that denote psychological actions, such as dëshpërrohem 'I become disappointed, I get sad', gëzhohem 'I rejoice', hidhërrohem 'I become bitter', kollem 'I cough', krenohem 'I take pride', mendohem 'I think', mërzitam 'I get bored, annoyed', penqohem 'I regret', pezmatohem 'I become irritated, I chafe', përkëllohem 'I am mortified',

Al nuk MËRZITEJ duke dëgjar ngjarje nga jeta e njeriu tê dërdhur në bronx. 'He did not GET BORED listening to tales about the life of the man cast in bronze,'

-- Me qaramanë nuk bëhet lufta! -- U ZEMËRUA Memoja me të vëllanë. 'You can't fight a war with crybabies--(said) Memo angrily ('Memo BECAME ANGRY') to his brother.'

3) Verbs that denote changes in the state of the subject such as bëhem 'I become', egërsohet (deti) 'the (sea) gets rough', fishkem 'I wither', mvrehem 'I become sullen, I frown', nxhim 'I become black', përtërham 'I recover', plakem 'I grow old', qetëshohem 'I grow calm, I relax', rritet 'I grow up', skugem 'I redden, I blush',

Memoja e kish kuptuar që tipi i Rrapos në fillim NXEHET e mund të flasë fjalë të pakontrolluara, por pastaj QETËSOHET e ZBUTET. 'Memo had understood that Rrapo's type BECOMES INFLAMED in the beginning, and may utter careless words, but afterward they CALM DOWN and BECOME MILD;'

U TKURR, U MBLODH kruspull dhe zgjati duarti drejt plagëve për të ndaluar gjakun. 'HE SHRANK, curled up ('COLLECTED HIMSELF into a heap'), and stretched his hands toward the wounds to stop the bleeding.'

NOTES

1. The majority of verbs in the middle voice are derived from corresponding active forms: hidhem from hidh, kapem from kap, mbahem from mbaj, skuqem from skuq, zverdhem from zverdë, etc. But there are also some verbs in the middle voice that do not have a corresponding active form: kollem, pendohem, sulem, vërsolem, etc.

2. There are several verbs in the middle voice whose meaning is identical with or similar to the active voice used intransitively. Compare:

Nëjente se po e linte fuqia, se po i AFROHEJ vëdkja dhe nuk donte të jepej. 'He sensed that his strength was leaving him, that death was APPROACHING, and he did not want to give in.'

Po AFRONTE koha e drapit të parë dhe e shtegtitem të bagëtive. 'The time of the first harvest and of the migration of the sheep was GETTING CLOSER.'

Memoja U MENDUA. 'Memo THOUGHT'.

E zuri për krahul komandantin Rrapo e i tha: -- Të dëgjojmë Zarikun. -- Nuk MENDON keq -- tha Rrapoja dhe i thirri Fatës: -- Zariku atje është? 'He grabbed commander Rrapo by the arm and said to him: 'Let's listen to Farik.' "Not a bad idea ('you don't THINK badly')," said Rrapo, and he called out to Fate: 'Is Farik there?"
B.2 Passive Voice

A verb is in the PASSIVE voice when it has a non-active form, which would be the object of the corresponding active verb and names an action experienced by its subject. The passive voice may thus occur only with transitive verbs. The performing agent of a passive verb may or may not be expressed overtly.

Sultan Mehmet II pas betejës së Pollogut, duke parë që nuk e thyente dot Skënderbeun me forcë e armërve, nisi të përdorte të tjera mjete dhe shpejthësisë që Skënderbeu DO TË MUNDEJ prej shokërë, të cilët e bënin bë pamundshëm. ‘After the battle of Pollog, Sultan Mehmet II, seeing that he could not defeat Scanderbeg by the force of arms, began to use other means, and often said that Scanderbeg WOULD BE BEATEN by comrades who made him out to be invincible.’
Komandanti iu afrua partizanëve të mbledhur dhe tha: -- Nuk kam se c’ju mollols. E shihni edhe vetë si mbarol përpykja. U DOJVEN dhe U THYEN. Ca U VRANÈ, ca shpëtuam. Prapë, po të kalojë këtej, DO TË DIGJEN e DO TË THYHEN. ‘The commander approached the assembled partisans and said: I have nothing to tell you. You can see for yourself how the clash ended. THEY WERE BURNED and BROKEN. Some WERE KILLED, some escaped. THEY WILL BE BURNED and BROKEN again, if they come by this way.’

B.3 Reflexive Voice

A verb is in the REFLEXIVE voice when it has a non-active form and denotes an action that is both performed and experienced by the subject of the clause. Only active transitive verbs may have a reflexive voice. When the subject of the clause represents an agent (or several agents) who performs the action on himself (or themselves), then the verb is in the PROPER REFLEXIVE voice, as in krilhem ‘I comb myself’, lahem ‘I wash myself’, mburrem ‘I boast’, vishem ‘I dress up myself’, zhvishem ‘I undress myself’, etc.:
Kurrë s’mund ta ngatërroja atë me ndonjë tjetër, megjithëse të gjithë ISHIN VESHRU njësjoj, me kominoshe dhe çizme. ‘I could never mistake him for someone else, even though all of them WERE DRESSED alike, in overalls and boots.’

But, when the action requires two or more agents acting reciprocally on one another, then the verb is in the RECIPROCAL REFLEXIVE voice, as in fejohemi ‘we become engaged to (each other)’, hahem (me dikë) ‘I quarrel (with someone)’, kapem (me dikë) ‘I grapple (with someone)’, martohemi ‘we get married’, përqafohen ‘they embrace’, përshëndetem (me dikë) ‘I exchange greetings (with someone)’, piqueni ‘you run into (one another)’, takohemi ‘we meet (one another)’, zihem (me dikë) ‘I quarrel (with someone)’, etc.:
Ai e ndjente që ISH PRISHUR keq me Memon e me të tjerët. ‘He sensed that he HAD BROKEN UP badly with Memo and the others.’
Edhe ti, Genci, ZIHESH me shokët ndonjëherë -- tha Demka. ‘You, too, Genci, QUARREL with your comrades sometimes’, said Demka.

NOTES
1. Verbs used only in the third person may be in the Active, Middle or Passive voice:
   Active
   ndodh ‘it happens’
   ngjan ‘it happens (it resembles)’
   qëllun ‘it happens (it strikes)’
   rastis ‘it happens (it chances)’

   Middle
   do and ka in their modal uses (see Sections in 2.3.7).
   duhet ‘ought, must’
   (s’me) duket ‘it (doesn’t) seem(s) (to me)’

34 2.1.3 B.3 Reflexive Voice
2.1.4 Mood

The speaker's stance towards the relation between the action named by the verb and objective reality is expressed by the grammatical MOOD of the verb. The mood chosen by the speaker expresses his attitude toward the predicated matter, presenting it as an assertion, a possibility, a wish etc. In Albanian only those verb forms which vary according to person and number of the subject—i.e., FINITE forms—exhibit distinctions of mood. Non-finite forms (participles and gerundives) are thus not included.

The Albanian verbal system can be divided into five moods, each with a characteristic set of inflected verb forms: INDICATIVE, ADMIRATIVE, SUBJUNCTIVE, OPTATIVE, IMPERATIVE. In addition, two or three more inflected sets using subjunctive forms are sometimes included as moods on the basis of their modal meanings: CONDITIONAL, JUSSIVE, and less commonly, a so-called SUBJUNCTIVE-ADMIRATIVE mood. These seven (or eight) moods may be divided into three groups:

The first group includes the indicative and admirative moods, by which the speaker expresses an attitude of reality towards the predication made by the verb. By means of the admirative, the speaker adds a sense of surprise as well.

The second group includes the subjunctive (and subjunctive-admirative) and conditional moods which primarily express the modality of potentiality or possibility.

The optative, jussive, and imperative moods, which comprise the third group, are most commonly used to express the modality of desirability, the first in the form of a wish or a curse, the second in the form of a suggestion or proposal, and the third in the form of an order or a demand. The three moods of this third group have close ties to those of the second, because through the moods of desire and command, a future proposition is expressed, the outcome of which is possible but uncertain.

As will become apparent later in the relevant sections, in particular instances, verbal forms of a given mood are sometimes used with secondary modal meanings far removed from their basic meaning.

The grammatical forms of the various moods will be discussed in detail in later sections.

2.1.5 Tense

The relation between the time of the action denoted by the verb and an assumed temporal base point for a clause is expressed by the grammatical category of TENSE. For the spoken language, the base point is assumed to be the moment of speaking, whereas for the written language, the base may either be the moment of writing or some other posited point.

An action occupying some period of time that includes the moment of speaking is expressed by a present tense of the verb. Actions which occur before the moment of speaking are in a past tense, while those which are to occur after the moment of speaking are in a future tense. The basic TIME categories for verb tenses then, are PAST, PRESENT, and FUTURE.

Grammatical tense distinctions are made chiefly in the indicative, subjunctive, admirative, and optative moods, each of which has both present and past tense forms. In the subjunctive,
there is a future tense as well. As for non-finite forms of the verb, the temporal meanings of the verb phrases of which they are a part are determined by the tense of the finite verbs that complement them (see Section 2.3.7).

2.1.6 Aspect

The Albanian language is rich in verbal grammatical forms through which various aspectual distinctions, as well as temporal ones, are expressed. The term ASPECT in this text is used to indicate the manner of development of the action designated by the verb. The principal distinction in aspect is based on the contrast between completed and incompleted action, as expressed by corresponding grammatical forms in the verbal conjugation. The grammatical category of aspect is not quite so basic in the verbal system of Albanian as it is, for example, in some Slavic languages, but certain tense forms of this verbal system must be distinguished by their aspectual differences. For example, there are five past tenses of the indicative mood: IMPERFECT, PAST DEFINITE, PRESENT PERFECT, PAST PERFECT, and PLUPERFECT. Some of these (the present perfect versus the past perfect and the pluperfect) are distinguished from each other by temporal differences; but the distinction between the imperfect, past definite, and perfect is aspectual. The imperfect represents a general, habitual, or repeated action, or an action in progress at a particular time in the past; the past definite represents a particular action carried out at a given moment in the past; and the perfect tenses represent a general or particular action that is prior to the point of temporal reference: the present moment for the present perfect, a past moment for the past perfect or pluperfect.

Kamioni e LA pas bërrylin e rrugës dhe U NDAL atje ku kodra SHTRINTE gjunjët e saj në lugnë. 'The truck LEFT [past definite] the shoulder of the road behind and Halted [past definite] there where the hill STRETCHED [imperfect] her knees into the valley.'

Të parët ZBRETËN shoferi dhe një grua me një fëmijë nga shtatë a tetëvjeçar. 'The chauffeur and a woman with a child of about seven or eight DESCENDED first.'

Gjashtë burra QËNDRONIN ende në karroceri dhe FLITNIN me njëri-tjetrin me zë të lartë. 'Six men WERE still REMAINING in the carriage station and WERE TALKING to one another in a loud voice.'

As will be explained in the relevant sections, a formal distinction may be made between two aspects of the present and imperfect indicative, one to indicate a momentary action, the other an action which is repeated time after time. When the verb denotes a general or repeated action, it appears in the appropriate one-word form for these two tenses: laj 'I wash', laja 'I used to wash'; whereas when the verb denotes a momentary action in progress, the emphatic particle po is placed before the verb form: po laj 'I am washing', po laja 'I was washing'. For action already in progress, an alternate progressive form, constructed with the verb jam in the present or imperfect followed by a gerundive introduced by duke, is also possible:

PO ZBRES gjer në fermë, mësues, dhe PO MARR një karrocë! -- tha Rustemi. "I am going ('I AM DESCENDING') as far as the farm, teacher, and I AM TAKING a carriage!", Rustem said.'

Dini qëndroi e mbajt vesh. Matanë avllisë në rrugën e tij dikush PO ECTE me vrapt. 'Dini halted and listened. Behind the wall on his street someone was running ('WAS WALKING hurriedly').'

Kur i huaji ISHTË DUKE KALUAR kaftëshën në katoqet e konakëve, djali u ngrit lart e na lajmerol << PO VJEN kapedani!>> 'While the stranger WAS MOVING the beast to the stables of the lodges, the boy got up and informed us, 'The chief IS COMING!!'
2.2 Conjugation of the Verb Core

At the core of any VP is a conjugational form of a verb. A conjugational form consists of a verb stem together with its affixes, as well as any auxiliary word that is inseparable from the stem and any verbal clitics attached to either the stem or to the auxiliary. This VERB CORE in a verb phrase may mark person and number of a subject, as well as mood, and tense, in which case we call the verb FINITE, or it may leave those categories unmarked, in which case we call the verb NON-FINITE. The totality of the verb core forms of a particular verb is called its CONJUGATION. The forms that a verb takes in the course of its conjugation may be simple or complex; every conjugational form contains a stem of the given verb, but may or may not contain affixes, auxiliaries, and verbal clitics. In the following discussion the verb stem is marked off from its affixes by a hyphen.

A simple form consists of a verb stem and its ending. The grammatical function of such a form may be marked:

1) By person endings (including the zero-ending): la-J ‘I wash’, la-N ‘he washes, you (Sg) wash’, la-JME ‘we wash’. As will be seen, the chief clue to the conjugational forms of most verbs are the STEM VOWEL and STEM CONSONANT. The stem vowel is the stressed vowel or vowel cluster of the stem, which is always the last vowel (or vowel cluster) of the stem (the only one in a monosyllabic stem). The stem consonant is the last consonant or consonant cluster of the stem, if the stem does not terminate in its stem vowel: la-NI ‘you (pl.) wash’, la-JNE ‘they wash’, la-JA ‘I used to wash’, la-JE ‘you (Sg) used to wash’, la-NTE ‘he used to wash’, la-NIM ‘we used to wash’, la-NIT ‘you (pl.) used to wash’, la-NIN ‘they used to wash’, hap ‘I open’, hap ‘you (Sg) open’, hap ‘he opens’, hap-IM ‘we open’, hap-NI ‘you (pl.) open’, hap-IN ‘they open’.

2) By verb stem modifications:
   c) Changing both stem vowel -a- to -e- and stem consonant -s- to -t- in the same persons as (a) and (b): flas ‘I speak’, flet ‘he speaks, you speak’, pērka ‘I belong’, pērket ‘he belongs, you belong’, vras ‘I kill’, vret ‘he kills, you kill’.

3) By both endings and stem changes:

4) By stem-derived suffixes followed by person endings, as in the synthetic forms of the optative or participles: la-fsh-a ‘may I wash’, hap-sh-a ‘may I open’, la-rē ‘washed’, lē-nē ‘left’.


6) By compounding with special forms of kam as the second element (the present and imperfect forms of the imperative are formed in this way): hap-kam ‘I actually open’, hap-kēsha ‘I actually opened’, qen-kam ‘I actually am’, qen-kēsha ‘I actually was, etc.

2.2.1 Verb Stems

The majority of verbs have a single basic stem upon which all its conjugational forms are built: hap ‘I open’, mbyll ‘I close’, qep ‘I sow’, mat ‘I measure’, etc. Thematic verbs like pune-j ‘I work’ and, rrēfe-j ‘I tell’, which regularly expand their stem vowels into ua and ye in the plural of the past definite and in the participle, respectively, are also included in this group. Similarly, verbs of the type shkrua-j ‘I write’, thye-j ‘I break’, which regularly collapse ua and ye into o and e, respectively, in the singular forms of the definite past are included in this group.

However, a large number of verbs utilize two or more stems in the course of their conjugation.


Verbs of the type heq ‘I pull’, mbjell ‘I sow’, vjel ‘I harvest’, nxjerr ‘I take out’ have three stems which are used in the course of their conjugation.


2) A second stem is shared by the second person plural in the present, all persons in the imperfect, all imperative forms, and all non-active forms in the present and imperfect: heq ‘pull’, hiq-uni ‘you pull’, hiq-ja ‘I used to pull’, hiq-em ‘I am pulled’; mbill-ni ‘you sown’, mbill-ja ‘I used to sow’, mbill-ēt ‘is sown’.

3) A third stem is used for the past definite: hoq-a ‘I pulled’, mboll-a ‘I sowed’.

A few verbs utilize four distinct stems in their conjugation. These are:

A) The verbs dal and marr: 1) dal ‘I come out’, dal-im ‘we come out’, etc.; 2) del ‘he comes out’, 3) dil-ni ‘you (pl.) come out’, dil-ja ‘I used to come out’, etc.; 4) dol-a ‘I came out’.

C) Verbs of the type përcas 'I burst': 1) përcas-im 'we burst', etc.; 2) përcet 'he bursts'; 3) përcit-nil 'you burst', përcit-ja 'I used to burst', etc.; 4) plas-a 'I burst', plas-ur 'burst'.

For the stems of irregular suppletive and non-suppletive verbs see Section 2.2.2.D.

2.2.2 Conjugational Types

The problem of classification of verbs into conjugational groups has not found a uniform, generally accepted solution in the study of Albanian grammar. The chief difficulties lie in the Albanian verbal system itself, which reflects the dramatic grammatical and phonetic changes the language has undergone through its history. In addition, the absence of generally accepted criteria for classification has made the solution of this problem difficult. A variety of criteria have been followed in the grammars of Albanian in such matters as the treatment of irregular verbs, the forms which should be considered as basic for classification into conjugational groups and their subdivisions, etc.

For the classification of verbs into conjugational groups, these criteria will be followed:

1. The analysis will be purely synchronic, using present-day standard Albanian forms as the basis.

2. A verb which throughout its conjugation presents irregularities which do not allow it to be grouped with other verbs will be treated separately as an irregular verb and hence left outside of conjugational classifications. This will be the case not only for suppletive verbs, but also for those verbs which exhibit sound changes that appear idiosyncratic in modern Albanian (for a list of irregular verbs, see below).

3. The primary classification of verbs will be based on the citation form, and particularly on the final sound (or sounds, when relevant) of that stem (referred to as the CITATION STEM or simply as "the stem"), as well as on the endings of the present tense indicative of the active voice ending from the citation form.

4. The further division of conjugational groups into classes and subclasses will be based not only on the citation form, but also on the stem of the past definite and sometimes the participle as well.

On the basis of these criteria, regular verbs in contemporary Albanian are divided into three conjugations:

Conjugation I includes verbs whose citation form ends in a vowel or vowel cluster plus the ending -j: puno-j 'I work', rrëfe-j 'I tell, relate', shkrua-j 'I write', lye-j 'I paint'. This group includes the majority of verbs and is very productive.

Conjugation II includes verbs whose citation stem ends in a consonant: hap 'I open', mat 'I measure'. This conjugation contains a large number of verbs, but is no longer very productive of new ones.

Conjugation III includes verbs whose citation form ends in a vowel: vë 'I place, I put', zë 'I catch', dë 'I know', shpie 'I carry', etc. This conjugational group includes a small number of verbs and is not productive.

A. Conjugation I

Conjugation I is divided into two classes:

CLASS I. This group includes verbs which extend the stem by -v- before the person ending in the first and second person singular of the past definite. The class is further divided into two sub-classes:

SUBCLASS I includes:

Variety a) Verbs with the stem vowels -ë- or -ë- which in the past definite plural (for all three persons) as well as in the participle are extended to -ëa- or -ëe-:
### Verbs and Verbal Phrases

**Chapter 2**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pres</th>
<th>Past Def</th>
<th>Participle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st Sg</td>
<td>1st Sg</td>
<td>1st Pl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>puno-J</td>
<td>puno-v-a</td>
<td>punua-m</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I work’</td>
<td>‘I worked’</td>
<td>‘we worked’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rrëfe-j</td>
<td>rrëfe-v-a</td>
<td>rrëfe-m</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I tell’</td>
<td>‘I told’</td>
<td>‘we told’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Variety b) Verbs with the stem vowel cluster -úa- or -ýe- which collapse in the singular past definite (for all three persons) into -é- and -é-, respectively:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pres</th>
<th>Past Def</th>
<th>Participle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st Sg</td>
<td>1st Sg</td>
<td>1st Pl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>shkrua-J</td>
<td>shkro-va</td>
<td>shkrua-m</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I write’</td>
<td>‘I wrote’</td>
<td>‘we wrote’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lye-J</td>
<td>le-v-a</td>
<td>lye-m</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I paint’</td>
<td>‘I painted’</td>
<td>‘we painted’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**SUBCLASS 2** includes those verbs with stem vowels -á-, -í, or -ý, which do not change the stem vowel in the past definite and participle:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pres</th>
<th>Past Def</th>
<th>Participle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st Sg</td>
<td>1st Sg</td>
<td>1st Pl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>la-J</td>
<td>la-v-a</td>
<td>la-mė</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I wash’</td>
<td>‘I washed’</td>
<td>‘we washed’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fshi-J</td>
<td>fshi-v-a</td>
<td>fshi-mė</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I sweep’</td>
<td>‘I swept’</td>
<td>‘we swept’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**CLASS II.** This class includes those verbs with an extended stem in the past definite and participle. The class is divided into three subclasses.

**SUBCLASS 1** includes verbs which have an -i- or -e- stem vowel and which appear with a stem-extension -t- in the past definite and the participle: arrij ‘I attain, I reach’, gjej ‘I find’, mbërij ‘I arrive’.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pres</th>
<th>Past Def</th>
<th>Participle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st Sg</td>
<td>1st Sg</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>arri-J</td>
<td>arri-t-a</td>
<td>arri-t-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I reach’</td>
<td>‘I reached’</td>
<td>‘reached’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gje-J</td>
<td>gje-t-a</td>
<td>gje-t-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I find’</td>
<td>‘I found’</td>
<td>‘found’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mbërrij</td>
<td>mbërrtl-t-a</td>
<td>mbërrtl-t-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I arrive’</td>
<td>‘I arrived’</td>
<td>‘arrived’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>


40

2.2.2 A. Conjugation I
Chapter 2

Verbs and Verbal Phrases

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pres 1st Sg</th>
<th>Past Def 1st Sg</th>
<th>Participle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>gjé-j</td>
<td>gjé-t-a</td>
<td>gjé-t-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I find’</td>
<td>‘I found’</td>
<td>‘found’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bre-j</td>
<td>brej-t-a</td>
<td>brej-t-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I gnaw’</td>
<td>‘I gnawed’</td>
<td>‘gnawed’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mba-j</td>
<td>mbaj-t-a</td>
<td>mbaj-t-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I hold’</td>
<td>‘I held’</td>
<td>‘I held’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

NOTE

Since verbs of this class end up with a consonant-final stem in the past definite, they take the same person endings in the singular as Conjugation II verbs.

SUBCLASS 3 includes the verbs bēj ‘I make’ and hyj ‘I enter’ and a few others which appear with a stem-extension -r- in the past definite (only in the singular) and participle:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pres 1st Sg</th>
<th>Past Def 1st Sg</th>
<th>Participle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>bē-j</td>
<td>bē-r-a</td>
<td>bē-r-ē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I make’</td>
<td>‘I made’</td>
<td>‘made’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hy-j</td>
<td>hy-r-a</td>
<td>hy-r-ē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I enter’</td>
<td>‘I entered’</td>
<td>‘entered’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

B. Conjugation II

Conjugation II is divided into two classes.

CLASS I includes those verbs which have a single stem for the present, past definite and participle:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pres 1st Sg</th>
<th>Past Def 1st Sg</th>
<th>Participle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>hap</td>
<td>hap-a</td>
<td>hap-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I open’</td>
<td>‘I opened’</td>
<td>‘opened’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vendos</td>
<td>vendos-a</td>
<td>vendos-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I decide’</td>
<td>‘I decided’</td>
<td>‘decided’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mat</td>
<td>mat-a</td>
<td>mat-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I measure’</td>
<td>‘I measured’</td>
<td>‘measured’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

NOTE

Verbs of the type lk-i ‘I go’, lk-ēn ‘he goes, you go’, hlp-i ‘I mount, I climb’, hip-ēn ‘he climbs, mounts; you climb, mount’, are also placed in this class, even though in the present they take the endings -l, -ēn, -ēn in the singular, unlike the other verbs in the class which exhibit bare stems in the present singular forms.

CLASS II includes those verbs which have different stem forms in different parts of the conjugation. This class has two subclasses:

SUBCLASS 1 is composed of those verbs which have the stem vowel -e-, -je- or -a- in the second and third person singular of the present indicative, but -o- in the past definite.

Varieties a) verbs have the stem vowel -e- in the citation form.

2.2.2 B. Conjugation II
Verbs and Verbal Phrases

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pres 1st Sg</th>
<th>Past Def 1st Sg</th>
<th>Participle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>drebh</td>
<td>drebh-a</td>
<td>drebh-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'I twist'</td>
<td>'I twisted'</td>
<td>'twisted'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>heq</td>
<td>heq-a</td>
<td>heq-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'I pull'</td>
<td>'I pulled'</td>
<td>'pulled'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nxjerr</td>
<td>nxjerr-a</td>
<td>nxjerr-ë</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'I take out'</td>
<td>'I took out'</td>
<td>'taken out'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vjel</td>
<td>vjel-a</td>
<td>vjel-ë</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'I harvest'</td>
<td>'I harvested'</td>
<td>'harvested'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

NOTE
The verbs pjek 'I roast', përjek 'I impact', ndjek 'I follow', and djeg 'I burn', which palatalize the final consonant of the stem (k: q, g: gj) are included here: e.g., poq-a 'I roasted', dogl-a 'I burned'.

Variety b) verbs have the stem vowel -a- or -o- in the citation form:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pres 1st Sg</th>
<th>Past Def 1st Sg</th>
<th>Participle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>dal</td>
<td>dol-a</td>
<td>dal-ë</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'I emerge'</td>
<td>'I emerged'</td>
<td>'emerged'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>marr</td>
<td>mor-a</td>
<td>marr-ë</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'I take'</td>
<td>'I took'</td>
<td>'taken'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

SUBCLASS 2 includes those verbs whose stem ends in -ed in the second and third person singular of the present indicative.

Variety a) verbs of the type përkas 'I belong' with a stem extension which has the form -as in the citation form.

Variety b) includes the verbs shkas 'I slip', vrás 'I slay', ngas 'I drive', and gërgas 'I tease', whose citation form ends in -as but whose stem in the past definite and in the participle loses the final consonant and ends in a vowel. Because the stem of the past definite ends in a vowel, these verbs take the same person endings as conjugation I, class I, subclass 2 (laj 'I wash': la-v-a 'I washed'); vrás/vret 'he kills, you kill', vro-v-a 'I slew' (vra-më 'we slew'), vro-rë 'slain'.

Variety c) verbs shes 'I sell', pres 'I await' (prit-a 'I awaited'), and zbres 'I descend' have citation forms ending in -es in their conjugation:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Citation Form (1st Sg Pres)</th>
<th>shes</th>
<th>pres</th>
<th>zbres</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2nd Sg Pres</td>
<td>shet</td>
<td>pret</td>
<td>zbre</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd Sg Pres</td>
<td>shit-ni</td>
<td>prit-ni</td>
<td>zbrit-ni</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st Sg Past Def</td>
<td>shit-a</td>
<td>prit-a</td>
<td>zbrit-a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Participle</td>
<td>shit-ur</td>
<td>prit-ur</td>
<td>zbrit-ur</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

C. Conjugation III

Conjugation III is divided into three classes:

Class I verbs have the stem extension -r in the singular Past definite and change the stem vowel to -u in all forms of the past definite. The verbs in this class have citation forms ending

42
Chapter 2

Verbs and Verbal Phrases


<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st Sg Pres</th>
<th>1st Sg Past Def</th>
<th>1st Pl Past Def</th>
<th>Participle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>vē</td>
<td>vur-ā</td>
<td>vu-mē</td>
<td>vē-nē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I put’</td>
<td>‘I put’</td>
<td>‘we put’</td>
<td>‘put’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>zē</td>
<td>zur-ā</td>
<td>zu-mē</td>
<td>zē-nē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I catch’</td>
<td>‘I caught’</td>
<td>‘we took’</td>
<td>‘taken’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>shpie</td>
<td>shpur-ā</td>
<td>shpu-mē</td>
<td>shpē-nē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I convey’</td>
<td>‘I conveyed’</td>
<td>‘we conveyed’</td>
<td>‘conveyed’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

NOTE

This class also includes the irregular suppletive verb bie ‘I bring’, prur-ā ‘I brought’, pru-mē ‘we brought’, prurē ‘brought’.

CLASS II verbs have a consonant-final stem in the past definite. Included here are di ‘I know’, fle ‘I sleep’, and ngre ‘I raise’ which have the stem-extension -t- in the past definite:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>di</th>
<th>dit-ā</th>
<th>dit-ur</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>‘I know’</td>
<td>‘I knew’</td>
<td>‘known’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fle</td>
<td>fjet-ā</td>
<td>fjet-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I sleep’</td>
<td>‘I slept’</td>
<td>‘slept’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ngre</td>
<td>ngrit-ā</td>
<td>ngrit-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I raise’</td>
<td>‘I raised’</td>
<td>‘raised’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

NOTE

The irregular suppletive verbs ha ‘I eat’ and rri ‘I sit, I stay’, are also conjugated according to this paradigm in the present indicative:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>ha</th>
<th>hēngr-ā</th>
<th>ngrē-nē</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>‘I eat’</td>
<td>‘I ate’</td>
<td>‘eaten’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rri</td>
<td>ndenj-ā</td>
<td>ndenj-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I stay’</td>
<td>‘I stayed’</td>
<td>‘stayed’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CLASS III. This class includes the verbs pi ‘I drink’ and shtle ‘I shoot’ which in the first and second person singular of the past definite have the stem-extension -v-:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>pi</th>
<th>pi-v-ā</th>
<th>pi-rē</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>‘I drank’</td>
<td>‘drunk’</td>
<td>‘drunk’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>shtle</td>
<td>shti-v-ā</td>
<td>shtē-nē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘I shot’</td>
<td></td>
<td>‘shot’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

NOTE

The present indicative of the irregular suppletive verbs lē ‘I let’ (la-shē ‘I let’, lē-nē ‘let’) and bie ‘I fall’ (ra-shē ‘I fell’, rē-nē ‘fallen’) is also conjugated according to the paradigm of conjugation III.

D. Irregular Verbs

Irregular verbs are divided into two main groups: IRREGULAR SUPPLETIVE and IRREGULAR NON-SUPPLETIVE verbs.

a) Irregular suppletive verbs:

2.2.2 D. Irregular Verbs
Verbs and Verbal Phrases

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>ja-m</th>
<th>qe-shē</th>
<th>qe-nē</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'I am'</td>
<td>'I was'</td>
<td>'been'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-m</td>
<td>pat-a</td>
<td>pas-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'I have'</td>
<td>'I had'</td>
<td>'had'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bie</td>
<td>pru-r-a</td>
<td>pru-rē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'I bring'</td>
<td>'I brought'</td>
<td>'brought'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ha</td>
<td>hēagra</td>
<td>ngrē-nē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'I eat'</td>
<td>'I ate'</td>
<td>'eaten'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jap</td>
<td>dha-shē</td>
<td>dē-hē-nē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'I give'</td>
<td>'I gave'</td>
<td>'given'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rri</td>
<td>ndenj-a</td>
<td>ndenj-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'I stay,</td>
<td>'I stayed,</td>
<td>'stayed,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sit'</td>
<td>sat'</td>
<td>sat'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>shoh</td>
<td>pa-shē</td>
<td>pa-rē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'I see'</td>
<td>'I saw'</td>
<td>'seen'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vā-j</td>
<td>erdh-a</td>
<td>ardh-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'I come'</td>
<td>'I came'</td>
<td>'come'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

b) Irregular non-suppletive verbs:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>the-m</th>
<th>tha-shē</th>
<th>the-nē</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'I say'</td>
<td>'I said'</td>
<td>'said'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dua</td>
<td>desh-a</td>
<td>dash-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'I want'</td>
<td>'I wanted'</td>
<td>'wanted'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lē</td>
<td>la-shē</td>
<td>lē-nē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'I leave,</td>
<td>'I left,</td>
<td>'left,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>let'</td>
<td>let'</td>
<td>let'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vdes</td>
<td>vdiq-a</td>
<td>vdek-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'I die'</td>
<td>'I died'</td>
<td>'dead'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vete</td>
<td>vajt-a</td>
<td>vajt-ur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'I go'</td>
<td>'I went'</td>
<td>'gone'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Other particulars about the conjugation of irregular verbs, especially jam, kam, them, dua, etc., will be discussed in later Sections.

### 2.2.3 Construction of Verb Core Forms

Grammatical forms in the verb core are divided into two major groups according to whether or not they reflect the person and number of the subject: FINITE and NON-FINITE forms. To the first group belong the different grammatical forms for the tenses of the indicative, admiring, subjunctive, optative and imperative moods, while the second group includes the invariable participial forms: the participle itself, larē 'washed'; the gerundive duke larē 'while (or) by washing, washing'; the non-finite negative form (privative) pa larē 'without washing'; as well as non-finite forms of the type pēr tē larē 'to wash' and the "perfect participle" me tē larē 'having washed'.

Finite and non-finite forms of verbs have two sets of inflectional forms—one set for the active voice and another for the non-active (passive, reflexive, and reciprocal voices).

#### A. Active Indicative Finite Forms

#### A.1 Present Tense Forms

The verbs of Conjugation I appear with the following person endings in the present tense:
Chapter 2

Verbs and Verbal Phrases

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Sg</th>
<th>Pl</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>-j</td>
<td>-jmë</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>-n</td>
<td>-ni</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>-n</td>
<td>-jnë</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Verbs of conjugation II, with the exception of eci ‘I walk’, ikì ‘I go’, and hipì ‘I mount’ appear with the following endings for the present indicative:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Sg</th>
<th>Pl</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>-Ø</td>
<td>-im</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>-Ø</td>
<td>-ni</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>-Ø</td>
<td>-in</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In the singular, the three verbs eci ‘I walk’, ikì ‘I go’ and hipì ‘I mount’ appear with the personal ending -I in the first person and -ën in the other two persons:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Sg</th>
<th>Pl</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>ec-i</td>
<td>ik-i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>ec-ën</td>
<td>ik-ën</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>ec-ën</td>
<td>ik-ën</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Verbs of conjugation III appear with the endings:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Sg</th>
<th>Pl</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>-Ø</td>
<td>-më</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>-Ø</td>
<td>-ni</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>-Ø</td>
<td>-në</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

For all three persons in both the singular and the plural Conjugation I verbs have a stem that doesn’t change. Only the verb bli-j ‘I buy’ changes stem vowel -e- to -i- in the second person plural: bli-nì.

Verbs of class I of conjugation II have an unchanging stem in the singular and plural.

Verbs of class II of conjugation II undergo the following changes in their stem.


Verbs of subclass 2 (përkas, vraš) change the stem-consonant -s to -t in the second and third person singular.

Verbs in class II change the stem vowel (or the sequence -jë-) into -I- for the second person plural (except for the verb marr ‘I take’ and jap ‘I give’ which keep the stem vowel -e-; mërr-nì ‘you take’ and jëp-nì ‘you give’). The verbs ndjek ‘I follow’, pënjek ‘I pursue’, përrjek ‘I impact’, and dëjeg ‘I burn’ also change -k to -q and -g to -gi for the second person plural.

In Conjugation III, all verbs of class I, the class II verbs fle ‘I sleep’ and ngre ‘I raise’ and Class III verbs with stem vowels -e- or -ë- (shtie and bie) change the stem vowel (or vowel cluster) to -i- in the second person plural.

1. Several irregular verbs also undergo changes in their stems in the present tense:

The verbs jam ‘I am’ and kam ‘I have’ in the second person singular as well as the first and second person plural change to -ë- rather than -a-. Jam has a different stem altogether for the third person singular, ësh-të:

2.2.3 A.1 Present Tense Forms 45
Verbs and Verbal Phrases

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sg</th>
<th>Pl</th>
<th>Sg</th>
<th>Pl</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>ja-m</td>
<td>je-mi</td>
<td>ka-m</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>je</td>
<td>je-ni</td>
<td>ke</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>ēstē</td>
<td>ja-nē</td>
<td>ka</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The -m ‘I say’ has the stem vowel -ē- in the first person plural as well as in the first person singular. In the second person singular, the stem vowel is -ua (thua), while for the other forms, it is -o-:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sg</th>
<th>Pl</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>the-m</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>thua</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>tho-tē</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Vi-j ‘I come’ in the second and third person singular has the stem vje-:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sg</th>
<th>Pl</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>vij</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>vje-n</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>vje-n</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Dua ‘I want’ has the -ua stem in the first and third person plural as well, but in the other forms of the present, has -o- instead:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sg</th>
<th>Pl</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>dua</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>do</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>do</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Vete ‘I go’ in the singular has its stem expanded by -te, whereas in the plural, it occurs with an unexpanded stem:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sg</th>
<th>Pl</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>ve-te</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>ve-te</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>ve-te</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2. The person endings for the irregular verbs, with the exception of jam, kam, and them, are in general the same as for verbs of the regular conjugations, and depend on the final sound of the stem. Thus the verb vi-j has the same person endings as the regular verb fshl-j ‘I sweep’ (Conjugation I). The verbs jaj, shoh, and vdes (2nd Pl vdis-ni) are conjugated according to the paradigm for Conjugation I, while all the other irregular verbs, with the exception of jam, kam, and them, and in part vete, take the endings of Conjugation III.

The verbs ja-m, ka-m and the-m, in the first person singular take the ending -m. In the second person singular, they have a zero ending. In the third person singular, jam and them take the ending -tē: ēsh-tē, tho-tē, while kam has a zero ending (ka). For the first person plural, they all take the ending -ni, while for the other two persons in the plural they take -ni and -nē (like verbs of the type ha ‘I eat’ and pi ‘I drink’ of Conjugation III).

The verb vete in the first person plural takes the ending -mi: ve-mi, just like je-mi, ke-mi, the-mi, while for the other two persons in the plural it is conjugated according to conjugation III: ve-ni, ve-nē, like di-ni ‘you know’, di-nē ‘they know’.

Table 2.4 displays the present tense conjugations of a sample verb from each subclass and variety of all three conjugations: panoj ‘work’ (I-I-1/a), quaj ‘call’ (I-I-1/b), laj ‘wash’ (I-I-2), glej ‘find’ (I-II-1), mba ‘hold’ (I-II-2), bēj ‘make’ (I-II-3), hap ‘open’ (II-I), heq ‘pull’ (II-II-1/a), dal ‘emerge’ (II-II-1/b), humbas ‘lose’ (II-II-2/a), vras ‘injure’ (II-II-2/b), shes ‘sell’ (II-II-2/c), vē ‘put’ (III-1), fē ‘sleep’ (III-II), shīl ‘insert’ (III-III).
Table 2.4 Present Tense Conjugations of Sample Verbs

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>I-I-1/a</th>
<th>I-I-1/b</th>
<th>I-I-2</th>
<th>I-II-1</th>
<th>I-II-2</th>
<th>I-II-3</th>
<th>II-1</th>
<th>II-II-1/a</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st Sg Pres</td>
<td>puno-j</td>
<td>qua-j</td>
<td>la-j</td>
<td>gje-j</td>
<td>mba-j</td>
<td>bē-j</td>
<td>hap</td>
<td>heq</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd Sg Pres</td>
<td>puno-n</td>
<td>qua-n</td>
<td>la-n</td>
<td>gje-n</td>
<td>mba-n</td>
<td>bē-n</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd Sg Pres</td>
<td>puno-jmē</td>
<td>qua-jmē</td>
<td>la-jmē</td>
<td>gje-jmē</td>
<td>mba-jmē</td>
<td>bē-jmē</td>
<td>hap-im</td>
<td>heq-im</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st Pl Pres</td>
<td>puno-ni</td>
<td>qua-ni</td>
<td>la-ni</td>
<td>gje-ni</td>
<td>mba-ni</td>
<td>bē-ni</td>
<td>hap-ni</td>
<td>heq-ni</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd Pl Pres</td>
<td>puno-jnē</td>
<td>qua-jnē</td>
<td>la-jnē</td>
<td>gje-jnē</td>
<td>mba-jnē</td>
<td>bē-jnē</td>
<td>hap-in</td>
<td>heq-in</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd Pl Pres</td>
<td>puno-jmē</td>
<td>qua-jmē</td>
<td>la-jmē</td>
<td>gje-jmē</td>
<td>mba-jmē</td>
<td>bē-jmē</td>
<td>hap-im</td>
<td>heq-im</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

II-II-1/b II-II-2/a II-II-2/b II-II-2/c III-1 III-II III-III

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>I-I-1/a</th>
<th>I-I-1/b</th>
<th>I-I-2</th>
<th>I-II-1</th>
<th>I-II-2</th>
<th>I-II-3</th>
<th>II-1</th>
<th>II-II-1/a</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st Sg Pres</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd Sg Pres</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd Sg Pres</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A.2 Past Time Tenses

A.2a. Imperfect Tense Forms

The majority of verbs in the imperfect tense have a stem identical to that of the citation form. However, those verbs which change their stem vowel and/or consonant in the second person plural form of the present tense undergo the same change in the imperfect. For example, compare:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb</th>
<th>1st Sg Pres</th>
<th>2nd Pl Pres</th>
<th>1st Pl Impurf</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'pull, remove'</td>
<td>heq</td>
<td>hiq-ni</td>
<td>hiq-ja</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'bake, roast'</td>
<td>pjek</td>
<td>piq-ni</td>
<td>piq-ja</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'kill, slay'</td>
<td>vras</td>
<td>vrit-ni</td>
<td>vrit-ja</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'catch, take'</td>
<td>zē</td>
<td>zi-ni</td>
<td>zi-ja</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'fall'</td>
<td>bie</td>
<td>bi-ni</td>
<td>bi-ja</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The verbs jam, kam, and them have special stems in the imperfect: ish-a ‘I used to be, I was’, kish-a ‘I used to have, I had’, and thosh-a ‘I used to say, I was saying’.

All verbs, including irregular ones (except jam and kam) take the following person endings in the imperfect:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sg</th>
<th>Pl</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>-ja</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>-je</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>-te (-nte)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The third person singular ending -nte is taken by verbs with a vowel final stem.

2.2.3 A.2a. Imperfect Tense Forms
### Verbs and Verbal Phrases

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sg</th>
<th>'pull'</th>
<th>'kill'</th>
<th>'put'</th>
<th>'open'</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>hiq-ja</td>
<td>vrit-ja</td>
<td>vi-ja</td>
<td>hap-ja</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>hiq-je</td>
<td>vrit-je</td>
<td>vi-je</td>
<td>hap-je</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>hiq-te</td>
<td>vris-te</td>
<td>vi-nle</td>
<td>hap-te</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pl</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>hiq-nim</td>
<td>vrit-nim</td>
<td>vi-nim</td>
<td>hap-nim</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>hiq-nit</td>
<td>vrit-nit</td>
<td>vi-nit</td>
<td>hap-nit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>hiq-nin</td>
<td>vrit-nin</td>
<td>vi-nin</td>
<td>hap-nin</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The verbs jam and kam take the endings -a, -e, -te in the singular and -im, -it, -in in the plural:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>'have'</th>
<th>'be'</th>
<th>'wash'</th>
<th>'call'</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>kam</td>
<td>jam</td>
<td>laj</td>
<td>quaaj</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### A.2b. Past Definite Forms

As mentioned earlier, the majority of verbs in the past definite appear with the same stem that they have in the citation form stem, but a number of verbs also appear with an extended stem, such as dl-t-a 'I knew', nbaj-t-a 'I kept, held', bë-r-a 'I made'; or with a stem minus its citation form extension, such as plas-a 'I burst', nga-va 'I drove' (whose citation forms are pëlc-as and nga-as); or with a stem with vowel or consonant changes, or both, such as shit-a 'I sold', prit-a 'I waited', zhrit-a 'I descended', ngrit-a 'I raised' (compare: shës, presz, zbres, ngre). These modified stems are often closely related to the participle (see Section 2.2.5.A), but they may also reflect a sound change (as in hoq-a 'I removed, pulled', poq-a 'I baked', dol-a 'I emerged'; compare hequr, pječ, dal), that is not related to the participial form (hequr, pječur, dal). The overwhelming majority of verbs (including the majority of irregular verbs) take the person endings -a, -e, -i/u in the singular, and all verbs (including the majority of irregular verbs) take the person endings -(l)ma(-e), -(l)e(l)e, and -(l)na(-e) in the plural.

The 3rd Sg ending -u appears on verbs whose stem ends in a back consonant (-k, -g, or -h), such as prek-u 'he touched' lag-u 'he wetted', kreh-u 'he combed', or with the final vowel -a, -e, or -i, such as la-u 'he washed', blu-u 'he bought', fshl-u 'he swept'. Verbs that have vowel-final stems extend the stem with -v- before the person endings for first and second singular: puno-v-a 'I worked', puno-v-e 'you worked'; la-v-a 'I washed', la-v-e 'you (Sg) washed'.

In the plural, verbs with a vowel-final stem appear with the allomorph endings -më/-m, -të/-t, -në/-n, the initial -ë of the ending dropping after a vowel, by the general rule mentioned in Chapter 1. The forms -m, -t, -n are the allomorphs of -më, -të, -në resulting from the dropping of the final unstressed -ë, after an unstressed syllable, as happens in all verbs with the vowel cluster -uə- or -je- in the plural. Compare: la-më 'we washed', la-të 'you (Pl) washed', la-në 'they washed', vra-më 'we slew', vra-të 'you (Pl) slew', vra-në 'they slew'.

48

2.2.3 A.2b. Past Definite Forms
on the one hand, with punua-m ‘we worked’, punua-t ‘you (Pl) worked’, punua-n ‘they worked’; lye-m ‘we painted’, lye-t ‘you (Pl) painted’, lye-n ‘they painted’ on the other.

Verbs with stem-final consonants appear with the allomorph endings -ēm, -ēt, -ēn for the plural of the past definite, the final-ē-dropping by the rule just cited: hap-ēm ‘we opened’, hap-ēt ‘you (Pl) opened’, hap-ēn ‘they opened’; plas-ēm ‘we burst’, plas-ēt ‘you (Pl) burst’, plas-ēn ‘they burst’; gjet-ēm ‘we found’, gjet-ēt ‘you (Pl) found’, gjet-ēn ‘they found’; hēngr-ēm ‘we ate’, hēngr-ēt ‘you (Pl) ate’, hēngr-ēn ‘they ate’; desh-ēm ‘we wanted’, desh-ēt ‘you (Pl) wanted’, desh-ēn ‘they wanted’, etc.

The irregular verbs bie ‘I fall’, jam ‘I am’, shoh ‘I see’, lē ‘I let’, them ‘I say’, whose past definite stems are, respectively, ra, qe, pa, la, tha take the special ending -shē in the first person singular of the past definite: ra-shē ‘I fell’, qe-shē ‘I was’, pa-shē ‘I saw’, la-shē ‘I let’, tha-shē ‘I said’. In the plural these verbs take the regular endings -mē, -tē, -nē, like other verbs with a stem final vowel: ra-mē, ra-tē, ra-nē. In the second person singular the result of adding e to an irregular stem ending in -a is simply -e: re ‘you fell’, pe ‘you saw’, le ‘you le(f)t’, the, ‘you said’. The special third person singular ending with irregular stems is zero.

Below is a sample of verb conjugations in the past definite, including the auxiliaries and a few others:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>'have'</th>
<th>'be'</th>
<th>'wash'</th>
<th>'call, name'</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>kam</td>
<td>jam</td>
<td>laj</td>
<td>quaj</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sg</th>
<th>1st</th>
<th>2nd</th>
<th>3rd</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>pat-a</td>
<td>qe-shē</td>
<td>la-v-a</td>
<td>quaj-t-a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pat-e</td>
<td>qe</td>
<td>la-v-e</td>
<td>quaj-e</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pat-i</td>
<td>qe</td>
<td>la-u</td>
<td>quaj-i</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pl</th>
<th>1st</th>
<th>2nd</th>
<th>3rd</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>pat-ēm</td>
<td>qe-mé</td>
<td>la-mé</td>
<td>quaj-ēm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pat-ēt</td>
<td>qe-tē</td>
<td>la-tē</td>
<td>quaj-ēt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pat-ēn</td>
<td>qe-nē</td>
<td>la-nē</td>
<td>quaj-ēn</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>'open'</th>
<th>'pull, remove'</th>
<th>'slay'</th>
<th>'put'</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>hap</td>
<td>heq</td>
<td>vras</td>
<td>vē</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sg</th>
<th>1st</th>
<th>2nd</th>
<th>3rd</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>hap-a</td>
<td>hoq-a</td>
<td>vra-v-a</td>
<td>vur-a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hap-e</td>
<td>hoq-e</td>
<td>vra-v-e</td>
<td>vur-e</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hap-i</td>
<td>hoq-i</td>
<td>vra-u</td>
<td>vur-i</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pl</th>
<th>1st</th>
<th>2nd</th>
<th>3rd</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>hap-ēm</td>
<td>hoq-ēm</td>
<td>vra-mē</td>
<td>vu-mē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hap-ēt</td>
<td>hoq-ēt</td>
<td>vra-tē</td>
<td>vu-tē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hap-ēn</td>
<td>hoq-ēn</td>
<td>vra-nē</td>
<td>vu-nē</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A.2c. Present Perfect Tense Forms

The present perfect is a compound tense of a present tense form of kam plus a participle; kam (ke, ka, kemi, keni, kanē) larē ‘I (you...) have washed’; kam (ke, ka, kemi, keni, kanē) hapur ‘I (you...) have opened’.

A.2d. Past Perfect Tense Forms

The past perfect is a compound tense composed of an imperfect form of kam plus a participle: kisha (kishe, kishte, kishim, kishit, kishin) larē ‘I (you...) had washed’; kisha
Verbs and Verbal Phrases

(kishe, kishte, kishim, kishit, kishin) hapur 'I (you...) had opened'.

NOTE
In the spoken language and occasionally also in writing, one encounters doubly compounded forms of the perfect and past perfect to form REMOTE perfects and past perfects. These are constructed by placing an older perfect or past perfect form of the verb kam--using an alternative participial form pasë-- before a participle, e.g., kam pasë larë 'I have washed (some time ago)'.

A.2e. Pluperfect Forms
The pluperfect is constructed by placing a form of the past definite of kam before the participle: pata (pate, pati, patën, patët, patën) larë 'I (you...) had washed'; pata (pate, pati, patën, patët, patën) hapur 'I (you...) had opened'.

A.3 Future Time Tenses

A.3a. Future Tense Forms
In present day standard Albanian, the future tense is constructed by placing do before a present subjunctive verb form (see Section 2.2.3.C.1).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>kam</th>
<th>jam</th>
<th>laj</th>
<th>hap</th>
<th>vë</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sg</td>
<td>do të ke-m</td>
<td>do të je-m</td>
<td>do të la-j</td>
<td>do të hap</td>
<td>do të vë</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>do të ke-sh</td>
<td>do të je-sh</td>
<td>do të la-sh</td>
<td>do të hap-ësh</td>
<td>do të vë-sh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>do të ke-të</td>
<td>do të je-të</td>
<td>do të la-jë</td>
<td>do të hap-ë</td>
<td>do të vër-ë</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>do të ke-ni</td>
<td>do të je-ni</td>
<td>do të la-në</td>
<td>do të hap-ni</td>
<td>do të vë-ni</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pl</td>
<td>do të ke-mi</td>
<td>do të je-mi</td>
<td>do të la-jmë</td>
<td>do të hap-im</td>
<td>do të vë-më</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>do të ke-në</td>
<td>do të je-në</td>
<td>do të la-jnë</td>
<td>do të hap-in</td>
<td>do të vë-në</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

NOTE
Gheg varieties of Albanian have a future tense composed of kam + me + short form of the participle, e.g., ka me shkue 'he will go'. In recent years a hybrid form of the future has developed in standard Albanian on this model. The hybrid construction replaces the Gheg infinitive (me + short form of the participle) with the Tosk infinitive (për + të + participle), yielding forms like kam (ke, ka, kemi, kenë, kanë) për të larë 'I (you, he...) will wash'; kam (ke, ka, kemi, kenë, kanë) për të hapur 'I (you, he...) will open'. For some speakers, this construction has a modal nuance of obligation, similar to English 'I have washing to do', or even 'I have to wash'.

A.3b. Future Perfect Forms
THE FUTURE PERFECT is a compound tense composed of a future tense form of kam plus a participle:
A.3c. Past Future Forms

THE PAST FUTURE is a compound tense composed of the particle do plus the subjunctive form of the imperfect:

- ‘I (you...) was going to have’
  - ‘I (you...) was going to be’
  - kam
  - do tê kisha
  - do tê kishe
  - do tê kishte (kish)
  - do tê kishim
  - do tê kishit
  - do tê kishin

- ‘I (you...) was going to wash’
  - ‘I (you...) was going to open’
  - ‘I (you...) was going to put’
  - laj
  - do tê laja
  - do tê laje
  - do tê lante
  - do tê lanit
  - do tê lanin

- Harry
  - do tê hapja
  - do tê hapje
  - do tê hapte
  - do tê hapnit
  - do tê hapnin

Much less commonly a past future is constructed with the imperfect forms of kam and a following non-finite phrase of the type pêr tê larê: kisha (kishe, kishte, etc.) pêr tê larê ‘I (you, he, etc.) was going to wash’, kisha (kishe, kishte, etc.) pêr tê hapur ‘I (you, he, etc.) was going to open’. (See preceding NOTE.)

A.3d. Past Future Perfect Forms

THE PAST FUTURE PERFECT is constructed by placing a form of the past future of the auxiliary kam before a participle: do tê kisha (kishe, etc.) larê ‘I (you, etc.) would have washed’; do tê kisha (kishe, etc.) hapur ‘I (you, etc.) would have opened’.

B. Admimative Mood Forms

B.1 Present Admimative Forms

This tense of the admimative is constructed by suffixing the person forms of the present tense of the auxiliary kam to a short form of the participle, with the forms of kam losing their stress. The present tense of the admimative is a synthetic form created by compounding in inverted order the two formative elements of the present perfect tense. In the third person plural, the second element of this form loses its final unstressed -ê because it now follows an unstressed syllable:

2.2.3 B.1 Present Admimative Forms
### Verbs and Verbal Phrases

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>'I have'</th>
<th>'I am'</th>
<th>'I wash'</th>
<th>'I open'</th>
<th>'I put'</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>kam (pasur)</td>
<td>jam (qenë)</td>
<td>laj (larë)</td>
<td>hap (hapur)</td>
<td>vë (vënë)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pas-kam</td>
<td>gen-kam</td>
<td>la-kam</td>
<td>hap-kam</td>
<td>vën-kam</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pas-ke</td>
<td>gen-ke</td>
<td>la-ke</td>
<td>hap-ke</td>
<td>vën-ke</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pas-ka</td>
<td>gen-ka</td>
<td>la-ka</td>
<td>hap-ka</td>
<td>vën-ka</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pas-këmi</td>
<td>gen-këmi</td>
<td>la-këmi</td>
<td>hap-këmi</td>
<td>vën-këmi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pas-këni</td>
<td>gen-këni</td>
<td>la-këni</td>
<td>hap-këni</td>
<td>vën-këni</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pas-kan</td>
<td>gen-kan</td>
<td>la-kan</td>
<td>hap-kan</td>
<td>vën-kan</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### B.2 Imperfect Admirative Forms

The imperfect admirative is created by suffixing the imperfect tense forms of *kam* to the short form of the participle. In this construction, these suffixed forms of *kam*, being unstressed, have undergone several phonetic changes: the stem vowel has been reduced to ə, and the 3rd Sg ending has been dropped. An alternate 3rd Sg form -kej is used in some varieties of Standard Albanian.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>'I used to have'</th>
<th>'I used to be'</th>
<th>'I used to wash'</th>
<th>'I used to open'</th>
<th>'I used to put'</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>kam</td>
<td>jam</td>
<td>laj</td>
<td>hap</td>
<td>vë</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pas-kësha</td>
<td>qen-kësha</td>
<td>la-kësha</td>
<td>hap-kësha</td>
<td>vën-kësha</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pas-këshe</td>
<td>qen-këshe</td>
<td>la-këshe</td>
<td>hap-këshe</td>
<td>vën-këshe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pas-kësh</td>
<td>qen-kësh</td>
<td>la-kësh</td>
<td>hap-kësh</td>
<td>vën-kësh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(pas-kej)</td>
<td>(qen-kej)</td>
<td>(la-kej)</td>
<td>(hap-kej)</td>
<td>(vën-kej)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pas-këshim</td>
<td>qen-këshim</td>
<td>la-këshim</td>
<td>hap-këshim</td>
<td>vën-këshim</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pas-këshit</td>
<td>qen-këshit</td>
<td>la-këshit</td>
<td>hap-këshit</td>
<td>vën-këshit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pas-këshin</td>
<td>qen-këshin</td>
<td>la-këshin</td>
<td>hap-këshin</td>
<td>vën-këshin</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### B.3 Present Perfect Admirative Forms

The present perfect admirative tense is composed of the present admirative form of *kam* plus a participle: *paskam* (paskë, paska, paskëmi, paskëni, paskan) larë ‘I (you...) have actually washed’; *paskam* (paska, paskë, paskëmi, paskëni, paskan) hapur ‘I (you...) have actually opened’.

#### B.4 Past Perfect Admirative Forms

The past perfect admirative tense is composed of the imperfect admirative forms of *kam* plus a participle: *paskësha* (paskëshe, paskësh, paskëshim, paskëshit, paskëshin) larë ‘I (you...) had washed’; *paskësha* (paskëshe, etc.) hapur ‘I (you...) had opened’.

**NOTE**

Occasionally one encounters doubly compounded forms for the admirative remote perfect (of the type *paska pasë larë* ‘he had actually washed’) and for the future (of the type *do té laka* ‘he will actually wash’).

#### C. Subjunctive Mood Forms

The mark of the subjunctive mood is the particle té plus the present or imperfect tense forms of the verb.
C.1 Present Subjunctive Forms

After the particle tē all the present subjunctive plural forms are the same as in the present indicative. In the present subjunctive singular, however, only the first person forms of the subjunctive are identical to those of the indicative. As indicated in Table 2.5, for the second- and third person singular of the present subjunctive, the stem used is generally the same as for the citation form of the verb, and thus unlike many of the corresponding 2nd and 3rd Sg stem forms in the indicative.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Ind Sg</th>
<th>Sub Sg</th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>dal</td>
<td>tē dal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>del</td>
<td>tē dal-ēsh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>del</td>
<td>tē dal-ē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>jap</td>
<td>tē jap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>jep</td>
<td>tē jap-ēsh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>jep</td>
<td>tē jap-ē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>shoh</td>
<td>tē shoh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>sheh</td>
<td>tē shoh-ēsh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>sheh</td>
<td>tē shoh-ē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>flas</td>
<td>tē flas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>flet</td>
<td>tē flas-ēsh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>flet</td>
<td>tē flas-ē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>vras</td>
<td>tē vras</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>vret</td>
<td>tē vras-ēsh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>vret</td>
<td>tē vras-ē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>zbraz</td>
<td>tē zbraz</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>zbre</td>
<td>tē zbraz-ē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>zbre</td>
<td>tē zbraz-ē</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The verbs jam and kam have the stems je- and ke- respectively for all persons (singular and plural) in the present subjunctive: tē je-m 'that I be', tē ke-m 'that I have', etc.

The verb ve-te 'I go' has its stem expansion -te only in the first person singular of the present subjunctive: tē vete, tē vesh, tē vejē, etc.

The verbs ngre 'I lift' and fle 'I sleep' (conjugation III, class II), vē 'I put', ze 'I catch', nxē 'I learn', pērže 'I dismiss', shple 'I take to, I carry', and ble 'I bring' (conjugation III, class I), shtle 'I shoot' (conjugation III, class III), as well as the verb lē, have their stem extended by -r in the third person singular of the present subjunctive: tē ngre-r-ē, tē fle-r-ē, tē vē-r-ē, tē ze-r-ē, tē nxē-r-ē, tē pērže-r-ē, tē shple-r-ē, tē bje-r-ē, tē shtle-r-ē, tē lē-r-ē.

For all verbs, the only person endings of the subjunctive which differ from those of the indicative are the ones for the second and third person singular of the present tense: -(ē)sh and -ē. The form -ēsh appears after a consonant-final stem. Verbs which have a stem-final vowel in the third person singular add -j before the ending -ē: tē la-j-ē 'that he washes', tē shkruan-j-ē 'that he writes', etc.

The verbs jam, kam and them also take the normal endings, but for the third person singular, they extend the stem by -t: tē je-t-ē, tē ke-t-ē, tē tho-t-ē. Compare these with the corresponding forms of the present indicative: ēsh-tē, ka, and tho-tē. Following are sample paradigms for selected verbs in the present subjunctive:

53
Verbs and Verbal Phrases

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>kam</th>
<th>jam</th>
<th>laj</th>
<th>hap</th>
<th>vē</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'have'</td>
<td>'be'</td>
<td>'wash'</td>
<td>'open'</td>
<td>'put'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| tē ke-m | tē je-m | tē la-j | tē hap | tē vē |
| tē ke-sh | tē je-sh | tē la-sh | tē hap-ēsh | tē vē-sh |
| tē ke-t-ē | tē je-t-ē | tē la-je | tē hap-ē | tē vē-r-ē |
| tē ke-mi | tē je-mi | tē la-ji-mi | tē hap-im | tē vē-mē |
| tē ke-ni | tē je-ni | tē la-ni | tē hap-ni | tē vē-ni |
| tē ke-nē | tē je-nē | tē la-nē | tē hap-in | tē vē-nē |

C.2 Past Time Subjunctive Tenses

C.2a. Imperfect Subjunctive Forms

In the imperfect tense, after the particle tē all verbs have the same forms for the subjunctive mood as they do for the indicative. For example, compare the indicative and subjunctive imperfect forms for 1st, 2nd, and 3rd Sg below:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>'wash'</th>
<th>'open'</th>
<th>'go'</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ind</td>
<td>Sub</td>
<td>Ind</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>laja</td>
<td>tē laja</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>laje</td>
<td>tē laje</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>lante</td>
<td>tē lante</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

C.2b. Present Perfect Subjunctive Forms

This tense is composed of the present subjunctive forms of kam plus a participle: tē kem (tē kesh, tē ketē, tē kemi, tē keni, tē kenē) larē ‘that I (you...) have washed’; tē kem (tē kesh, tē ketē, tē kemi, tē keni, tē kenē) hapur ‘that I (you...) have opened’.

C.2c. Past Perfect Subjunctive Forms

This tense is composed of the imperfect subjunctive forms of kam plus a participle: tē kisha (tē kishe, tē kishte, tē kishim, tē kishit, tē kishin) larē ‘that I (you...) had washed’; tē kisha (tē kishe, etc.) hapur ‘that I (you...) had opened’.

NOTE

The so-called SUBJUNCTIVE ADJURATIVE MOOD is composed of the admirative preceded by the subjunctive particle tē. This mood is rarely encountered, and then chiefly in the imperfect or past perfect: tē qenḵēsha ‘that I actually was’, tē qenḵēšah ‘that you actually were’, etc.

D. Optative Mood Forms

D.1 Present Optative Forms

Present optative forms are constructed by adding the following person endings to the special optative stem:
Chapter 2

Verbs and Verbal Phrases

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sg</th>
<th>Pl</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>-a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>-∅</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>-tê</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The special stem of the optative is constructed with the stem-forming suffix -fsh/-sh/-f. This suffix is attached to a verb stem which in the majority of cases is identical to the stem of the past definite, but in some cases to the stem of the participle, where this differs from that of the past definite. When the stem to which this suffix is attached ends in a vowel, the allomorph -fsh is used; if it ends in the consonant a or sh, the allomorph -ç is used; otherwise -sh is the allomorph chosen.

The allomorph -fsh forms the optative stems of:

1. The overwhelming majority of the verbs of conjugation I, with the exception of subclass I of class II: la-fsh-a ‘may I wash’, the-fsh-a ‘may I break’, shkro-fsh-a ‘may I write’.


4. The irregular verbs bie ‘I bring’ (prura ‘I brought’), bie ‘I fall’ (rashē ‘I fell’), shoh ‘I see’, vete ‘I go’; pru-fsh-a, ru-fsh-a, pa-fsh-a, va-fsh-a, (the last being constructed with the truncated stem of the past definite vajt-a ‘I went’); as well as jam: qo-fsh-a, constructed with the stem of the past definite qe-shē ‘I used to be’, modified to qo.

The allomorph -sh forms the optative stems of:

1. The majority of the verbs of conjugation II, with the exception of those of subclass 3, class II: hap-sh-a ‘may I open’, heq-sh-a ‘may I remove, may I pull’, mat-sh-a ‘may I measure’, bērtit-sh-a ‘may I yell’, etc.

2. The verbs of subclass 1, class II, of conjugation I, which appear with a consonant final stem in the past definite: gjet-sh-a ‘may I find’, mbajt-sh-a ‘may I hold’, mbrojτ-sh-a ‘may I defend’.


The allomorph -ç forms the optative stems of:

1. The verbs of conjugation III, class I: vēn-ç-a, zēn-ç-a, pērzēn-ç-a, nxēn-ç-a, shpēn-ç-a (also shpu-fsh-a);

2. Those verbs of conjugation II whose stems end in -sh; qesh-ç-a.

3. Those irregular verbs whose optative stems end in -n or -sh: thēn-ç-a (them), dhēn-ç-a (jap), lēn-ç-a (he), dash-ç-a (dua).

The irregular verb kam: pa-ç-a.

NOTES


2. Verbs which have a participle that ends in -nē, with the exception of the verbs jam, ha, and bie ‘fall’, construct the stem of the optative from the participle: vēn-ç-a, zēn-ç-a, pērzēn-ç-a, nxēn-ç-a, lēn-ç-a, dhēn-ç-a.

2.2.3 D.1 Present Optative Forms
3. The verbs vij, dua, and vdes also form the optative stem from the stem of the participle: ardh-sh-a (ardhuz), dash-č-a (dashur), vdek-sh-a (vdekur).

4. All other verbs form the optative from a stem identical to that used for the past definite singular.

A sample paradigm of the present optative for selected verbs appears below:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>kam</th>
<th>jam</th>
<th>laj</th>
<th>hap</th>
<th>vē</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st Sg</td>
<td>paç-a</td>
<td>qo-fsh-a</td>
<td>la-fsh-a</td>
<td>hap-sh-a</td>
<td>vēn-č-a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd Sg</td>
<td>paç</td>
<td>qo-fsh</td>
<td>la-fsh</td>
<td>hap-sh</td>
<td>vēn-č</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd Sg</td>
<td>paç-tē</td>
<td>qo-f-tē</td>
<td>la-f-tē</td>
<td>hap-tē</td>
<td>vēn-tē</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st Pl</td>
<td>paç-im</td>
<td>qo-fsh-im</td>
<td>la-fsh-im</td>
<td>hap-sh-im</td>
<td>vēn-č-im</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd Pl</td>
<td>paç-i</td>
<td>qo-fsh-i</td>
<td>la-fsh-i</td>
<td>hap-sh-i</td>
<td>vēn-č-i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd Pl</td>
<td>paç-in</td>
<td>qo-fsh-in</td>
<td>la-fsh-in</td>
<td>hap-sh-in</td>
<td>vēn-č-in</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

D.2 Present Perfect Optative Forms

The forms of this tense are constructed by placing the optative forms of kam before a participle: paç lařē 'I wish I had (may I have, if only I had) washed', paç lařē 'I wish you had (may you have, if only you had) washed', paç-tē lařē 'I wish he had (may he have, if only he had) washed', paç-im lařē 'I wish we had (may we have, if only we had) washed', paç-i lařē 'I wish you had (may you have, if only you had) washed', paç-in lařē 'I wish they had (may they have, if only they had) washed'.

E. Imperative Mood Forms

This mood has forms only for the second person singular and plural.

The imperative plural for all verbs has the same form as the second person plural of the present indicative (see Section 2.2.3.A.1 for these). These two homonymous forms are distinguished from one another by the contexts in which they appear. In writing, an exclamation point (!) is used in Albanian to mark imperative sentences. Although English does not usually use the exclamation point this way, we will use it here in the glosses to mark the verb as imperative. Compare: (ju) punoni (you) work! vs. punoni! 'work!'; (ju) dilni 'you' emerge!' vs. dilni! 'emerge!'; (ju) vilni 'you' harvest! vs. vilni! 'harvest!'; (ju) vini 'you' come! vs. vini! 'come!'. Only a small number of verbs have the same form in the second person singular of the present indicative as in the imperative singular. These are:

1. The verbs of class I of conjugation II: (ti) hap 'you' open! vs. hap! 'open!'; (ti) mat 'you' measure! vs. mat! 'measure!'.

2. The verbs of conjugation III (di 'I know', pi 'I drink'): (ti) pi vs. pi!, 'you' drink!' vs. 'drink!'

3. The irregular suppletive verbs ha 'eat', rri 'sit, stay', jap 'I give': (ti) ha vs. ha! 'eat!', (ti) jap vs. jap! 'give!'.

The verbs which have different forms for the singular imperative from those of the second person singular of the present indicative can be divided into four groups:

1. Verbs of conjugation I with stems in -o-, -e- (except brej 'I gnaw', gje 'I find', and ble) 'I buy', as well as all those in -i-, take no ending in the singular imperative: mëso 'learn!', puno 'work!', shko 'go!', rrërë 'tell!', shpërble 'compensate, reward!', fshi 'sweep!', përpi 'swallow up!'
Chapter 2  Verbs and Verbal Phrases

NOTE

But note that bre-j ‘gnaw!’, gle-j ‘find!’, are like the verbs of group 2 below, and bli ‘buy!’ is like the verbs of group 3 below.

2. All other verbs of conjugation I (with the exception of those of group I above, and the verb hyj ‘I enter’ and the irregular verbs them and dua in the imperative singular have the ending -j: mba-j ‘keep! hold!’, la-j ‘wash!’, mbru-j ‘knead!’, fry-j ‘blow!’, shkrua-j ‘write!’, lua-j ‘play!’, lye-j ‘paint!’, thye-j ‘break!’, përzie-j ‘mix!’, bëj ‘do!, make!’; thua-j ‘tell!’ dua-j ‘like!, love!’).

3. Verbs whose imperative plural has the stem vowel -i- form the imperative singular by removing the -ni suffix from the plural form: hiq ‘pull!’ (heq), vil ‘harvest!’ (vjeq), mbill ‘plant!, sow!’ (mbjell), nxirr ‘take out!’ (nxjerr), dil ‘emerge!’ (dal), piq ‘bake!’ (pjek), digj ‘burn!’ (djeg), bërrit ‘yell!’ (beritas), thërrit ‘call out!’ (thërras), fill ‘sleep!’ (fle), (mos e) ngri ‘(don’t) lift (it)!’ (negre), ji ‘be!’ (jam), ki ‘have!’ (kam), sëh ‘see!’ (shoh), vdis ‘die!’ (vdes), (mos e) vrit ‘(don’t) kill (it)!’ (vras), (mos e) ngit ‘(don’t) drive (it)!’ (ngas), (mos e) gërgit ‘(don’t) incite (it)’ (gërgas), (mos e) prit ‘(don’t) cut (it)!’ (pres).

4. Verbs which have an -r- extended stem in the third person singular of the present subjunctive use that same stem for the imperative singular:

b) the verb hyj ‘I enter’ of conjugation I, as well as the irregular verbs bie ‘fall’ and lë ‘let’; hyr, hjer, lër.

NOTES

1. The verbs of subclass 3, class II of conjugation II (vras, ngas, gërgas, pres ‘I cut’) have a more singular imperative form that is identical to the stem of the past definite: (mos e) vra! ‘(don’t) kill (it)!’ (mos e) nga! ‘(don’t) drive (it)!’ (mos e) gërga! ‘(don’t) incite (it)!’ (mos e) pre! ‘(don’t) cut (it)!’

2. The verb flas ‘I speak’ has fol for the singular imperative, but flit-ni for the plural, identical to the second person plural of the present indicative.

3. The irregular verb vij ‘I come’ appears in the imperative as eja, ejani.

4. The irregular verb vete ‘I go’ does not have a special form in the imperative. The second person singular and plural of the subjunctive are used instead: të vesh ‘(that you) go’, të venë ‘(that you) go (pl.)’.

When a singular imperative form ends in a vowel and is followed by a pronominal clitic of a personal pronoun, -j- is added to the verb form and the clitic is suffixed after it, as in mëso-j-e ‘learn it!’:, shërbe-j-e ‘reward him!’:

Ndhimo-j-e shokun! ‘Help (your) comrade!’ Rërfe-j-u shokëve! ‘Tell (your) comrades!’,
Trego-j-i të gjitha me radhë! ‘Show them all one after another!’

However, when an imperative is followed by the clitic form of the third person singular pronoun i followed by another short form or the reflexive non-active clitic u, -j- is not inserted between the two vowels; rather, the short form i is written as -j-:

Hapja derën mikut! ‘Open the door for your friend!’
Përvishju punës menjëherë! ‘Get to work at once!’

This observation is also valid on those occasions where the pronominal clitic is inserted after the stem, but before the person ending for the plural of the imperative:

Ndhimo-j-e-ni shokun! ‘Help (your) comrade!’
Trego-ja-ni shokut të vërtetën! ‘Tell (your) comrade the truth!’.

After the negative particle mos, the pronominal clitic precedes rather than follows the verb stem, and is written with a space before the verb. Compare:

2.2.3 E. Imperative Mood Forms 57
2.2.4 Non-Active Voice Forms

As was explained in Section 2.1.3.B, non-active verbal forms are used to express the passive, reflexive, and middle voices. What marks a verb form as non-active may be 1) its distinctive endings, 2) the clitic, 3) the auxiliary verb jam followed by a participle.

A. Non-Active Forms Marked by Endings

The non-active forms of the present indicative and subjunctive, the imperfect indicative and subjunctive, as well as the future (of the type do tɛ lahem ‘I will wash myself’) and the past future (of the type do tɛ lahesha ‘I was going to wash myself’), have distinctive non-active endings, following the non-active stem formative -he- (after vowel ending stem) or -e- (after consonant-ending stem).

A.1 Present Tense Non-Active Forms

The person endings for the present tense of the non-active conjugation are: -m, -sh, -t, -ml, -nl, -n. These endings are added to the same verb stem form as used in the second person plural of the present tense active:

| ‘open’   | hap     | hap-ni | hap-e-t |
| ‘wash’   | laj     | la-ni  | la-he-t |
| ‘pull’   | heq     | hiq-ni | hiq-e-t |
| ‘sow’    | mbjell  | mbill-ni | mbill-e-t |
| ‘roast’  | pjek    | plq-ni | plq-e-t |
| ‘burn’   | djeg    | dig-ni | digi-e-t |
| ‘kill’   | vras    | vrit-ni | vrit-e-t |
| ‘speak’  | flas    | flit-ni | flit-e-t |

However, verbs whose second person plural present active stem ends in a vowel cluster -ua-, -ye-, or -le- drop the second vowel of the cluster:

Citation form 2nd Pl Act 3rd Sg Non-Act
‘call’      quaj     qua-ni   qu-he-t
‘break’     thyej   thye-ni  thy-he-t
‘sense’     ndiej   ndie-ni  ndi-he-t
Following is a representative sample of present non-active paradigms:

<p>| | | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>laj</td>
<td>quaj</td>
<td>hap</td>
<td>heq</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'I wash'</td>
<td>'I call'</td>
<td>'I open'</td>
<td>'I pull'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>la-he-m</td>
<td>qu-he-m</td>
<td>hap-e-m</td>
<td>heq-e-m</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>la-be-sh</td>
<td>qu-he-sh</td>
<td>hap-e-sh</td>
<td>heq-e-sh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>la-he-t</td>
<td>qu-he-t</td>
<td>hap-e-t</td>
<td>heq-e-t</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>la-he-mi</td>
<td>qu-he-mi</td>
<td>hap-e-mi</td>
<td>heq-e-mi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>la-he-ni</td>
<td>qu-he-ni</td>
<td>hap-e-ni</td>
<td>heq-e-ni</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>la-he-n</td>
<td>qu-he-n</td>
<td>hap-e-n</td>
<td>heq-e-n</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

mat  vras  vē

mat-e  vrit-e  vi-he-m
mat-e-sh  vrit-e-sh  vi-he-sh
mat-e-t  vrit-e-t  vi-he-t
mat-e-mi  vrit-e-mi  vi-he-mi
mat-e-ni  vrit-e-ni  vi-he-ni
mat-e-n  vrit-e-n  vi-he-n

These same forms are used for the non-active forms of the subjunctive mood, preceded by the particle tē:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st Sg Non-Act Ind</th>
<th>1st Sg Non-Act Sub</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'wash' la-he-m</td>
<td>tē la-he-m</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'call' qu-he-m</td>
<td>tē qu-he-m</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'pull' hiq-e-m</td>
<td>tē hiq-e-m</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A.2 Imperfect Tense Non-Active Forms

The non-active imperfect tense is marked for all forms except (optionally) the 3rd Sg by the stem-formative suffix -sh-. Following that suffix are the person endings -a, -e, -j, -im, -it, -in. The combination shj that would be thus produced in the 3rd Sg is impossible in Albanian; instead, either the sh or the j is dropped, leaving the other as the ending of the form. The verbal stem to which these endings are added is identical to that of the present non-active stem.

Following is a representative sample of the imperfect non-active paradigms:
The non-active imperfect subjunctive (including the future anterior of the type do tè laja ‘I would wash’) use these same forms following the particle tè:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st Sg Imperf Non-Act Ind</th>
<th>1st Sg Imperf Non-Act Sub</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>‘wash’ la-he-sh-a</td>
<td>(do) tè la-he-sh-a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘call’ qu-he-sh-a</td>
<td>(do) tè qu-he-sh-a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘pull’ hiq-e-sh-a</td>
<td>(do) tè hiq-e-sh-a</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

B. Non-Active Forms Marked by the Clitic u

For the past definite indicative, the present and imperfect admirative, the present optative, the imperative, and all forms constructed with the participle, including the future of the type kam pèr tè larè ‘I have washing to do’, and the anterior future of the type kisha pèr tè larè ‘I had washing to do’, the corresponding non-active forms are constructed with the clitic u.

B.1 Past Definite Tense Non-Active Forms

The non-active past definite is marked by the clitic u before the corresponding active forms of the verb: u lava ‘I washed myself, I was washed’, lave, u lamè, u latè, u lanè (compare lava ‘I washed’ lave, lamè, latè, lanè); u ktheva ‘I returned, I turned (myself), I was turned’, u ktheve, u kthyem, u kthyet, u kthyen (compare: ktheva ‘I turned (something)’, ktheve, kthyem, kthyet, kthyen); u hapa ‘I opened up (myself)’, u hape, u hapèm, u hapèt, u hapèn (compare; hapa ‘I opened’, hape, hapèm, hapèt, hapèn).

In the non-active third person singular, however, the active person ending -i or -u does not appear:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>3rd Sg Act Past Def</th>
<th>3rd Sg Non-Act Past Def</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>‘open’ hap-i</td>
<td>u hap</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘hold’ mbajt-i</td>
<td>u mbajt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘wash’ la-u</td>
<td>u la</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘touch’ prek-u</td>
<td>u prek</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘kill’ vra-u</td>
<td>u vra</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Verbs with a stem in -o- or -e- (with the exception of ble-j ‘I buy’) appear with the expanded stem vowel clusters -ua- and -ye- respectively in the third person singular: shkro-i ‘he wrote’/u shkrua ‘it was written’; mèso-i ‘he learned’/u mèsu’a ‘he was taught’; kthe-u ‘he
turned’/u kthy e ‘he returned’; shpërble-u ‘he rewarded’ / u shpërbleye ‘he was rewarded’, etc.

Those verbs of class II/1 of conjugation II whose stems end in one of the consonants -l, -l, -r, -re (e.g., vjel ‘harvest’/vola ‘I harvested’; sjell ‘I bring’/solla ‘I brought’; nxjerr ‘I take out’/nxora ‘I took out’; marr ‘I take’ / mora ‘I took’), also expand the vowel -o- into the cluster -ua- in the third person singular of the past definite: voli/u vual (also u vol); sollu/u suall; nxori/u nxuar/; morti/u muar; etc.

The verbs of class II of conjugation III appear in the third person singular without the stem extension, compare: vur-i ‘he placed’/u vu ‘he was placed’; zur-i ‘he caught’/u zu ‘he was caught’; perzur-i ‘he dismissed’/u perzu ‘he was dismissed’; shpur-i ‘he conveyed’/u shpu ‘he was conveyed’; prr-i ‘he brought’/u pru ‘he was brought’.

B.2 Admimative Mood Non-Active Forms

For the non-active present and imperfect admimative, the particle u appears before the corresponding form of the active conjugation: u lakam ‘I actually wash myself’, u lake, u laka, u lakem, u lakem, u lakam, u lakem, u lakam; u lakesha ‘I actually washed myself’, u lakeshe, u lakesh (or u lakej), u lakeshim, u lakeshit, u lakeshin.

B.3 Optative Non-Active Forms

The present optative non-active has the particle u before the corresponding person forms of the active conjugation: u lafsha ‘may I wash myself’, u lafsh, u laff, u laffsh, u laffsh, u laffsh, u laffshin.

B.4 Imperative Non-Active Forms

In the non-active forms of the imperative the clitic u (preceded by -h- after vowel-ending stems) is suffixed to the corresponding active form of the second person singular, right after the stem (and thus before the person ending of the second person plural): hap-u ‘open yourself up!’; hap-uni ‘open yourselves up!’; la-h-u ‘wash yourself!’; la-h-uni ‘wash yourselves!’; zi-h-u ‘quarrel!’; zi-h-uni ‘quarrel (among yourselves)!’. However, when the non-active imperative is preceded by the negative particle mos, the clitic u appears directly before the verb: mos u hap ‘don’t open yourself up’, mos u hapni ‘don’t open yourselves up’; mos u laj ‘don’t wash yourself’, mos u lani ‘don’t wash yourselves’; mos u zr ‘don’t quarrel’, mos u zni.

B.5 Participial Non-Active Forms

The non-active forms composed of tenses (the hybrid future and past future) that use kam plus a participle have the clitic u preceding the participle: kam përkëlare ‘I have washing to do’; kisha përkëlare ‘I had washing to do’, kam (ke, ka, etc.) përkëlare ‘I have washing of myself to do’; kisha (kishe, kishte, etc.) përkëlare ‘I had washing of myself to do’.

C. Non-Active Forms Marked by jam + Participle

In the non-active conjugation, all compound verbal forms constructed with the auxiliary kam in the active conjugation are constructed instead with jam. In these constructions, the auxiliary jam is conjugated for person and number, while the participle remains invariable.

The following non-active tenses, then, are constructed with jam:

1. The present perfect, past perfect, pluperfect, past future, and past future perfect of the indicative mood: jam (je, ëshë, etc.) lare ‘I have been washed’ jam hapur ‘I have been opened’; isha lare ‘I used to be washed’, isha hapur ‘I used to be opened’; qeshë lare ‘I had

2.2.4 C. Non-Active Forms Marked by jam + Participle
been washed', qeshē hapur 'I had been opened'; do tē jem larē 'I will have been washed', do tē jem hapur 'I will have been open'; do tē isha larē 'I would have been washed', do tē isha hapur 'I would have been opened'.

2. The present perfect and past perfect of the imperative: qenkmā larē 'I have actually been washed', qenkmā hapur 'I have actually been opened'; qenķēsha larē 'I had actually been washed', qenķēsha hapur; 'I had actually been opened'.

3. The present perfect and past perfect of the subjunctive; tē jem larē 'that I have been washed', tē jem hapur 'that I have been opened', tē isha larē 'that I had been washed', tē isha hapur 'that I had been opened';

4. The present perfect of the optative: qofsha larē 'may I have been washed', qofsha hapur 'may I have been opened'.

2.2.5 Non-Finite Verb Forms

PARTICIPLES are the non-finite forms of verbs in Albanian, that is, the verb forms which do not reflect the person and number of a subject.

The first group of constructions using participles are the COMPOUND TENSES, treated in appropriate places in this chapter. The PERFECT tenses are composed of a finite auxiliary verb--principally a form of jam or kam--plus a participle. Depending on whether the auxiliary is kam or jam the compound tense will be active or non-active voice, respectively. Depending on the tense and mood of the auxiliary, the compound tense may be present, past, or future, and indicative, subjunctive, imperative, or optative. In all these compound tenses, the verb aspect is PERFECT, indicating that action is completed at the reference base point assumed in the clause. The PERIPHRASTIC COMPOUND tenses are composed of a form of kam or jam plus INFINITIVE (see below) or GERUNDIVE (see below) or of a modal auxiliary plus the participle (see Section 2.3.7 A).

The second group includes the participle itself and those non-finite constructions using it as the base: PRIVATIVES (pa larē 'without washing'), GERUNDIVES (duke larē 'while washing'), and characteristic Gheg forms like me punue 'to work') and me tē larē 'by washing, having washed'.

A. Formation of the Participle

The verbal stem from which a participle is formed is usually the same as the stem of the past definite, although it may instead either be the same as a stem used in the present tense or different from either of these.

1. The following verbs form the participle from a stem like one used for the past definite:

a) All verbs of conjugation I. Verbs with the stem vowel -o- or -ua- and -e- or -ye- have participles whose stem vowel is the cluster -ua- and -ye- respectively, just as in the past definite plural: la-va 'I washed'; la-rē 'washed'; fshi-va 'I swept'; fshi-rē 'swept'; punua-m 'we worked'; punua-r 'worked'; shkrua-m 'we wrote'; shkrua-r 'written'; rrēfye-m 'we told'; rrēfye-r 'told'; lye-m 'we painted'; lye-r 'painted', etc.: gjet-a 'I found'; gjet-ur 'found'; mbajt-a 'I held': mbajt-ur 'held'; bēr-a 'I made'; bēr-ē 'made'.

b) The verbs of conjugation II (except for those of subclass I of class II which change their stem vowel to -o- in the past definite): hap-a 'I opened' / hap-ur 'open'; mat-a 'I measured' / mat-ur 'measured'; bērīt-ta 'I yielded/bērīt-ur 'yielded'; thirr-a 'I called out'/ thirr-ur 'called out'; fol-a 'I spoke'/ fol-ur 'spoken'; shit-a 'I sold'/ shit-ur 'sold'; vra-va 'I killed' / vra-rē 'killed'.

c) The verbs of conjugation III (di 'know', file 'sleep', ngre 'raise', shpie 'take to', and pi 'drink') dit-a 'I knew'/ dit-ur 'known'; fjet-a 'I slept'/ fjet-ur 'slept'; ngrit-a 'I raise'/ ngrit-ur 'raised'.

62
d) The irregular verbs jam 'I am', bie 'I bring', rři 'I sit, stay', shoh 'I see', and vete 'I go', qe-shē 'I was/eq-e-ně 'they were'; pru-ra 'I brought'/pru-ra 'brought'; ndenj-ur 'stayed'; pa-shē 'I saw'/pa-ra 'seen'; vajt-a 'I went'/vajt-ur 'gone'.

2. The following verbs form the participle from a stem like one used for the present tense:

   a) The verbs of subclass 1, class II of conjugation II: heq 'pull' (hoq-a 'I pulled'); heq-ur 'pulled'; vjel 'harvest' (vol-a 'I harvested'); vjel-ē 'harvested'; pječ 'bake' (poq-a 'I baked'); pječ-ur 'baked'; nxjerr 'take out' (nxor-a 'I took out'); nxjerr-ē 'taken out'; dal 'emerge' (do-l-a 'I emerged'); dal-ē 'emerged'.

   b) The verbs of class I of conjugation III and the irregular verb lē 'leave, let': vē 'I put' (vur-a 'I put'); vē-ře-nē 'put'; zē 'I catch' (zur-a 'I caught'); vē-ře-nē 'caught'; pērzcē 'I dismiss' (pērzcē-nē 'dismissed'); nxē 'I learn' (nxur-a 'I learned'); nxē-ře-nē 'learned'; lē 'I leave, let' (la-shē 'I left'); lē-ře-nē 'I left, let'.

3. The following verbs form the participle from a verbal stem that is different from the stems used for the present or past definite: ble 'I fall' (ra-shē 'I fell'); rē-ře-nē 'fallen'; ha 'I eat' (hëng-a 'I ate'); ngre-ńe 'eaten'; jap 'I give' (dha-shē 'I gave'); dhē-ńe 'given'; shtie 'I shoot' (shtie-řa 'I shot'); shtie-ře-nē 'shot'; them 'I say' (tha-shē 'I said'); ka-m 'I have' (pat-a 'I had'); pas-ur 'had'; dua 'I want' (desh-ńa 'I wanted'); dash-ur 'wanted'; vdes 'I die' (vdiq-a 'I died'); vdek-ur 'dead'.

The suffixes used to form participles are: -ře or -r, -ur, -e, and -nē.

1. The following verbs form their participles with -ře (after a stressed vowel) or -r (after an unstressed vowel):

   a) the verbs in class I of conjugation I: lā-ře 'washed', fsli-ře 'swept', punia-r 'worked', lye-r 'painted', etc.;

   b) the verbs in subclass 3, class II of conjugation II: vřa-ře 'slain', shkā-ře 'slipped, slid', ngā-ře 'driven', pre-ře 'cut', etc.;

   c) the conjugation III verb pi 'drink'/pl-ře 'drunk', as well as the irregular verb shoh 'I see'/pá-ře 'seen'.

2. The following verbs form their participle with -ur:

   a) the verbs in subclass I, class II of conjugation I: gjet-ur 'found', mbajt-ur 'held', mbroj-ur 'defended', etc.;

   b) the verbs of conjugation II, except for those in subclass 3 of class II (see 1b) and those with stems in -l, -ll, -r, -rr (class II/1) which change the stem vowel to -o in the past definite (see 3b below): hap-ur 'opened', vendos-ur 'decided', mat-ur 'measured', rrah-ur 'beaten', njoh-ur 'recognized' (class II/1);

   c) the verbs of conjugation III (class II/1): di 'I know', fle 'I sleep', ngre 'I raise'/dit-ur 'known', fjet-ur 'slept', ngrit-ur 'lifted';

   d) the irregular verbs kam 'I have', dua 'I like', rri 'I stay', vdes 'I die', vete 'I go', vjì 'I come'/pas-ur 'had', dash-ur 'liked', ndenj-ur 'stayed', vdek-ur 'dead', vajt-ur 'gone', arch-ur 'come, arrived'.

3. The following verbs form their participles with -e:

   a) the verbs běj 'I make' and hyj 'I enter' (class II/2) of conjugation I: bēr-e 'made', hyr-ē 'entered';

   b) the verbs in subclass 1 of conjugation II, class II which have stems ending in -l, -ll, -r, -rr, and which change the stem vowel to -o in the past definite: vjel-ē 'harvested', dal-ē 'emerged', mbjell-ē 'sown', sjell-ē 'brought', nxjerr-ē 'taken out', tjerr-ē 'spun', marri-ē 'taken';

   c) the verbs bie 'I bring' and shple 'I convey' (prura 'I brought' and shpura 'I conveyed'): prur-e 'brought' and shpur-ē (or shpēn-ē) 'conveyed', respectively.

2.2.5 A. Formation of the Participle
4. The following verbs form their participle with -ë:

B. Participial Constructions

B.1 Active Participial Forms

B.1a Privatives

Non-finite PRIVATIVE forms are constructed by placing the preposition pa before the participle: pa pasur ‘without having’, pa larë ‘without washing’, pa qenë ‘without being’, pa hapur ‘without opening’, pa vëné ‘without putting’, pa ngrënë ‘without eating’.

In Standard Albanian one rarely encounters complex forms of the type pa pasë larë ‘without having eaten’, which use the special short participial form pasë (rather than pasur) of the auxiliary kam before the participle of the main verb. Such complex forms are sometimes called the perfect aspect of the privative; forms like pa larë may then be called the common aspect.

B.1b Gerundives

The GERUNDIVE is composed of the particle duke plus the participle: duke pasur ‘(while) having’, duke qenë ‘(while) being’, duke larë ‘(while) washing’, duke hapur ‘(while) opening’, duke vëné ‘(while) putting’, duke ngrënë ‘(while) eating’.

In Standard Albanian one rarely encounters complex forms of the type duke pasë larë ‘having washed’, with the special short participial form pasë of the auxiliary kam before the participle of the main verb. Forms of this type duke pasë larë are sometimes called the perfect aspect of the gerundive; forms like duke larë may then be called the common aspect of the gerundive.

B.1c Infinitives and Absolutives

So-called INFINITIVES of the type për të larë ‘to wash’ and ABSOLUTIVES of the type me të larë ‘having washed, upon washing, by washing’, are composed of the prepositions për and me respectively plus të plus a participle. The characteristic Gheg infinitive form is composed of me plus a short form of the participle, e.g., me punë ‘to work’, but will not be discussed further here because it has not been accepted as belonging to present-day standard literary Albanian.

B.2 Non-Active Participial Forms

The non-finite privative forms, the gerundive, non-finite forms of the type për të larë ‘to wash’ and me të larë ‘to wash’, all have non-active forms as well. In all of these forms, for the common aspect the clitic u appears immediately before the verbal stem: pa u larë ‘without washing oneself’, pa u hapur ‘without opening oneself’, pa u zënë ‘without quarrelling’, duke u larë ‘while washing oneself’, duke u hapur ‘while opening oneself up’, duke u zënë ‘while
quarrelling'; për t'u larë 'to wash oneself', për t'u hapur 'to open oneself', për t'u zënë 'to quarrel'; me t'u larë 'having been washed', me t'u hapur 'having been opened', me t'u zënë 'having been caught'.

Qenë, the-participle of jam, is used for the perfect aspect of the non-finite privative and gerundive: pa qenë larë 'without being washed', pa qenë hapur 'without being opened'; duke qenë larë '(while) being washed', duke qenë hapur '(while) being opened'.

NOTE
In the same way, the non-active Gheg form corresponding to the active infinitive me la 'to wash' is me qenë la 'to be washed', me qenë hapun 'to be opened'.

2.3 Major Uses of Conjugational Verb Forms

2.3.1 Indicative Mood Uses

As mentioned in Section 2.1.4, the speaker may use the indicative mood to present the action named by a verb as real. When the speaker wishes to deny or express uncertainty toward this reality, the verb is accompanied by the negative proclitic nuk or s' or by a qualifying adverb like ndofta 'maybe, perhaps', mbase 'perhaps, maybe', kushedi 'perhaps ("who knows")', etc.

Èshës ëra kafër pas dreke. 'It is four o'clock in the afternoon.'
Armi kë kë diktuar lëvizjen tonë e PO na RREH me artileri e mortajë të rënda. 'The enemy has detected our movement and IS HITTING us with heavy artillery and mortar.'
Mitralozat gjermane PO DËGJOHEN më afër. 'The German machine guns ARE BEING HEARD closer.'
Duhet të shpejtëjmë; ndryshe, DO TË na SHPËTOJË zogu nga dora. 'We must hurry; otherwise, the bird WILL GET AWAY from us ("from the hand").'
Batalioni i parë NUK KA ARDHUR akoma. 'The first battalion HAS NOT ARRIVED yet.'
Po e DIMË se pas pak DO TË na VIJË në ndihmë. 'But WE KNOW that in a little while IT WILL COME to our aid.'

Verb forms in the indicative mood, are conventionally divided into TENSES: sets of person-number forms that indicate a particular time and aspect. Besides the present tense forms, Albanian distinguishes five tenses dealing with past time: imperfect, past definite, perfect, past perfect, and pluperfect.

A. Present Tense Uses

The basic use of a verb in the present indicative is to indicate the reality of an action at the moment of speaking. But, as will become apparent below, in particular contexts the action indicated may take place at an indefinite time or even in the future or past.

When used to specify action limited to the present time, present tense verb forms (with a few exceptions—see notes 1 & 2 below) are usually preceded by the momentive proclitic po, which signals that a particular action is actually under way or imminent at the moment of speaking. The complex verb form constructed with the present tense of the auxiliary jam plus a gerundive can be used with a similar meaning, except that the action it indicates must already be in progress:

JA, PO HESHT. Vetëm ti m'u hiq sysh. 'THERE, I'M SHUTTING UP. Just get out of my sight.'
-- Ç'PO BËN këtu? -- e pyeti kryevegllharxi, kur kaloj përbri. 'WHAT ARE YOU DOING here?--the chief attorney asked him, when he passed alongside.'
-- PO VËSHTROJ si mblojët këshilli i lavdshëm -- tha kronikani. ‘I AM WATCHING how the glorious council convenes, the chronicler said.’

NOTES

1. Several verbs which designate actions or states that normally characterize the subject for an indefinite time are rarely, if ever, accompanied by the particle po. Such are the verbs: dua ‘I want’, di ‘I know’, dashuroj ‘I love’, urrej ‘I hate’, kam, jam, gjendem ‘I am (at)’, ndodhem ‘I happen to be (at)’, nxë ‘I learn’, përmban ‘contains’, ngërthen ‘tightens’, etc.

Dhe tani S’DUA të më shqetësojë njeri. ‘And now I DO NOT WANT anyone to disturb me.’

Ju ADMIROJ! ‘I ADMIRE you.’

Nuk do të harroj kurri këtë mbës mjë, që po kalojmë me ju. Nuk e DI, kjo s’më ka shkuar ndërmdë. ‘I shall never forget this evening that we are spending with you. I don’t KNOW why I feel like this (“I don’t know, this has never crossed my mind”).’

2. Several verbs, particularly those indicating physical or physiological actions, are usually used without the particle po, especially in questions, even when a specific action is involved. This happens because such verbs normally already indicate specific actions. Nevertheless, to emphasize the momentaneous aspect of the action, po may be used with its usual value even with these verbs:

-- Pse HESHT? TË paktën ti mos hesht. KEEP?) QUIET? At least you should not keep quiet.’

C’MENDON tì? S’mund të bëj unë një punë? ‘WHAT DO you think? I can’t handle (“do”) a job?’

-- PO HABITESH? -- tha kryeveqilharhxi. ‘YOU ARE (BEING) SURPRISED?—said the chief attorney.’

-- Ti nuk më DËGJON? Ti PO QAN? ‘You are not listening (“DO NOT LISTEN”) to me? You ARE CRYING?’

When used with an indefinite temporal meaning, verbs in the present tense are not accompanied by the particle po. Used in this way, they may indicate:

a) general actions that are repeated time after time:

Janë çelur udhë, udhë të gjera, kryq e tërthorë. Traktorët TËRHEQIN rrëshqanë trungjet dhe atje, ndë të përpretë, trungjet vërsulan teposhtë, të llahtarshëm, nëpër lugjet e druutja dhe me potere të hatashme, BIEN tutje në fund të pyllit, ku i PRET sharra. ‘Roads have been built, wide roads, all over. The tractors DRAG the trunks and there, on the incline, the trunks dash downward, frightfully, among the wooded valleys, and with a horrible din tumble down (“FALL”) way out at the end of the forest, where the sawmill AWAIT them.’

Sharrat elektrike të dorës UTURIJNË nga të katër anët e pyllit. ‘Electric hand saws hum on all (“four”) sides of the forest.’

Ai NGRIHET në mëngjes në orë 5. ‘He RISES at 5 o’clock in the morning.’

b) actions which are not bound to a particular time, because they have a timeless value.

One such use of the present tense is noticed in popular sayings (proverbs) and in scientific axioms of general truths, when they make assertions that have value for all times, including the moment of speaking:

Ai që S’PUNUN, LËNGON. ‘He who DOES NOT WORK, LINGERS.’

GJYKON puna, S’GJYKON guna. ‘It’s the work that counts (“JUDGES”), not the cloak.’

UJI që RRI më një vend, qelbet. ‘Water that STAYS in one place becomes smelly.’

Lumi FLE, hasml S’FLE. ‘The river SLEEPS, the enemy DOESN’T (SLEEP).’

Oksid i karbonit ËSHTË një gaz pa ngjyrë, pa erë, pak më i lëhtë se ajri, nuk TRETET në ujë. ‘Carbon monoxide IS a gas without color, without odor, slightly lighter

66  

2.3.1 A. Present Tense Uses
than air, does not DISSOLVE in water.’
Oksid i Karbonit `ESHTË shumë i helmët. ‘Carbon monoxide IS very poisonous.’
Oksid i karbonit FORMOHET, kur qymyr DIGJET në temperaturë të lartë dhe kur oksligjënë nuk `ESHTË i majtueshëm-për-të-oksiduar-të-gjithë karbonin e qymyrit në gaz karbonik. ‘Carbon monoxide IS FORMED when coal BURNS at a high temperature and the oxygen IS not sufficient to oxidize all the carbon in the coal into carbon gas.’
Shqipëria SHTRIHET në bregum lindor të Adriatikut. ‘Albania LIES on the eastern shore (‘hill’) of the Adriatic.’

The present tense of the indicative mood may also be used with a future meaning, when the sentence has an adverbial indicating the future, such as nesër ‘tomorrow’, pasnesër ‘day after tomorrow’, pas një ore ‘after an hour’, etc. In this usage the verb in the present tense is not accompanied by the particle po, although it may indicate a specific action:

Dëgjo këtu, NESËR na VJEN uji te dera e do të gëzohemi. ‘Listen here, TOMORROW the door COMES to our door and we will rejoice.’

The present indicative is used on two kinds of occasions when the time of the action indicated is in the past:

a) When in order to enliven a past, we pretend that it is happening right before our eyes. This is called the historical or narrative present tense:

Krujë, o qyet i bekur, / Prite, prite Skënderbenë, / PO VJEN si pëllumb i shkuar / të sëpëtojë mëndëhenë. ‘Krujë, oh blessed city / wait, wait for Skënderbeu / HE IS COMING like a friendly swan (‘pigeon’) / to save the motherland.’

JEMI në Labovën e Poshta me dhërë deri së 19 janarit 1944. ‘WE ARE in Lower Labovë near evening of January 19, 1944.’

VJEN një fonogram që THOTË: ‘Komandanti i Brigadës të niset urgjentisht për Sheper.’ ‘A telephone message COMES that SAYS: the Brigade Commander must set out urgently for Sheper.’

E DËRGON Shtati i Përgjithshëm. ‘The General Staff SENDS HIM.’

NISEMI menjëherë lart malit. ‘WE LEAVE at once [to go] up the mountain.’

Nata na ZË në malin e Labovës. ‘The night overtakes (‘CATCHES’) us on the mountain of Labovë.’

Mezi KALOMEN Çajupin dhe mëngjesi na ZË në kishën e Sheperit, në Zagori. ‘We barely CROSS the Çajup mountain and morning finds (‘CATCHES’) us in the church of Sheperi in Zagori.’

b) When a time adverbial indicates how long an action continuing at the moment of speaking has been going on. In this case, the present is used with the sense of the present perfect (see Section 2.2.3 A.2c). In this usage the verb in the present tense is generally not accompanied by the particle po:

Kemi tri net që pothuaj nuk FLEMË. ‘For (‘we have’) three nights we have not slept (‘WE almost do not SLEEP’).’

Ja se c’ma HA e ç’ma BREN zemrën këto tre vjet, që kur u bërë fejesat tona. ‘This is what has been eating and gnawing (‘EATS and GNAWS’) at my heart these three years, since our engagement (‘since our vows were made’).’

NOTE

The first person plural of the present indicative is also used with the sense of the subjunctive jussive mood to express the speaker’s advice, encouragement, etc. (see Section 2.3.7 B.2):

-- DALIM në ajër të pastër -- tha kryeveqilharxhi. ‘LET’S GET OUT into clean air,’ said the chief attorney.’

2.3.1 A. Present Tense Uses
SHKOJMË në çadrën time të pimë ndonjë gjë dhe të çlodhemi pak. ‘LET’S GO to my tent to drink something and rest awhile.’

B. Past Tense Uses

Among the five main past tenses, the imperfect, past definite, and perfect forms generally indicate actions concluded prior to the moment of speaking, whereas the past perfect and pluperfect forms indicate actions completed before a particular moment in the past.

B.1 Imperfect Tense Uses

The basic use of the indicative imperfect is to indicate the reality of an action over a period of time in the past.

Tani ato me siguri FLININ, të lodhura e të këputura nga rruga, në çadrën e tyre njyrë lila. ‘They were now assuredly ASLEEP, tired, and exhausted ("broken") from the journey ("road"), in their lily-colored tent.’

Me hapë të qeta ai u kthye dhe u fut në çadrër, pa ju hedhur as sytë dy rojeve, që RKININ si të ngrirër, me heshhta në duar, në hyyje të saj. ‘With calm steps he turned and entered the tent, without even glancing ("throwing the eyes") at the two guards that STOOD at its entrance, as if frozen, with lances at hand.’

Pastaj agonitë sytë nga adjuntani, që PRISTE në këmbë. ‘Then he looked up at the adjutant, who WAITED standing.

To specify continuous actions limited to a specific period in the past, an indicative imperfect form is usually accompanied by the proclitic po, which emphasizes that a particular action is actually under way or imminent at a particular moment in the past, often indicated by a temporal adverbial:

Kështu mendonte Dini pa vënë re se PO RENDONTE me bërlly mbë dorezën e derës së vagonit, ku që pëshëte. ‘This is the way Dini thought, not noticing that he WAS PRESSING DOWN with his elbow on the handle of the wagon door (on which) he was leaning.’

Treni PO HYNTE në kthesën e madhe. ‘The train WAS ENTERING the big bend.’

The proclitic po is less commonly used with the imperfect than with the present tense.

In particular contexts the imperfect indicative may be used with other particular values:

1. It is used to indicate an indefinite action, repeated time after time in the past. In such cases, the verb in the imperfect is often accompanied by an adverbial which indicates the repetition of the action more clearly. The adverbial may be:

   a) a temporal expression which indicates a fraction or period of time that is regularly repeated, like: çdo mëngjes ‘every morning’, çdo ditë ‘every day’, çdo javë ‘every week’, çdo vit ‘every year’, herë pas here ‘time after time, from time to time.’

Jenicerët i NDËRRONIN çdo dy orë me trupa të freskëta. ‘They replaced ("CHANGED") the Janissaries every two hours with fresh troops.’

Herë pas here KTHENTE kokën e shikonte fytërën e të vëllait dhe sytë i NDALTE në atë të gërvishtrurën e faqes. ‘From time to time he TURNED his head and looked at the face of his brother, and rested ("STOPPED") his eyes on that scratch on (his) face.

Nganjëherë në vendet më të ngushta të saj trupat BLOKOHESHIN, gjersa xhenicerët HAPNIN ndonjë shteg ndihmës për të përbballuar dyndjen e papërë. ‘Sometimes the troops WERE BLOCKED at its narrowest places, until the engineers OPENED an auxiliary passage in order to resist the incessant advances.’ Pastaj rruga LIROHEJ përsëri dhe ushtria lëvizte ngadalë përmes pluhurit. ‘Afterward the road WOULD BE LIBERATED again, and the army would move slowly through the dust.’
b) a subordinate clause which also has as its predicate a verb in the imperfect indicative:

Ata heshtën. Sa herë që BISEDONIN për protezat, midis tyre BINTE një heshjë e rëndë. ‘They became silent. Whenever THEY DISCUSSED the protheses, a heavy silence-FELL between-them.’

Shpeshherë ato HIDIHESHIN nga shkëmbinjë dhe COPËTOHESHIN nèper humnera, kur ushtarët armiç U AFROHESHIN për t'i kapur. ‘Often they JUMPED OFF the rocks and SHATTERED THEMSELVES among the ravines, when the enemy soldiers APPROACHED them in order to capture them.’

2. It may also be used to indicate general action extending over an indefinitely long time in the past:

NË Fushat e bregdetit dhe një krahinat e tjera pajlore të llirisë popullsia MERREJ me bujqësi e blegtori dhe me kulturat frutore. ‘In the coastal plains and in the other fertile regions of Illyria the population engaged (“WAS TAKEN”) in farming and livestock and with fruit cultures.’

NË krahinat e brendshme malore ekonomia e tyre MBESHTETEJ kryesisht në blegtornë. ‘In the interior mountainous regions their economy DEPENDED chiefly on livestock.’

Veglat, me të cilat PUNOHEJ toka, ishin parmenda e drunjë dhe kazma e hekurë. ‘The implements with which the land WAS cultivated (“WORKED”) were the wooden plow and the iron pick.’

3. The imperfect indicative is also used to represent the moment of speaking in the past. This happens when a sentence with a predicate in the present indicative in direct discourse is turned into indirect discourse by being embedded in a clause with a verb of saying (them ‘I say’, pyes ‘I ask’, ëpërgjigjem ‘I respond’, etc.) in one of the past tenses, chiefly the imperfect or past definite. Such a replacement of the present by the imperfect may also occur when sentences describing a landscape become embedded in another clause whose verb is in one of the past tenses. On such occasions the imperfect takes the particle po if the verb in direct discourse would have it with the present tense:

Kronikani shkuantane se këto ISHIN male të lartë, ku as sorat nuk futuroni dot. ‘The chronicler wrote that these WERE high mountains where even ravens could not fly.’

Pashai i tha se nuk DONTE të hante. ‘The Pasha said to him that he did not WANT to eat.’

As Adili s’po ngopej dot atë mëngjes së shikuari këto fushë të gjerë, që SHTRIHEJ llirishë në mes dy lumenjë të mëdhenj, Vjosës dhe Semanit, e MBYLLEJ përpara nga një vetullë e dëndur dhe e errët pishash. ‘That morning, even Adil couldn’t have his fill of looking at this broad plain, that SPREAD OUT easily (“freely”) between two big rivers, Viosë and Seman, and WAS CLOSED OFF ahead by a dense and dark eyebrow of pine trees.’

NOTE

The imperfect forms of the verbs jam and kam are sometimes used with the value of the past definite.

B.2 Past Definite Tense Uses

The basic use of the past definite is to indicate an action performed and completed at a particular, definite time in the past. Thus, the difference between this tense and the imperfect is essentially aspectual in character (see Section 2.1.6):

-- Po, -- THA me mundim Dini. ‘“Yes,” SAID Dini with effort.’

ERDHI, më PA, QAU, dhe IKU. ‘HE CAME, SAW me, CRIED, and LEFT.’

MË PA, sëc po më sheh ti. ‘He SAW me, as you see me.’

NË të dalë të dimrit, kur delegatët e sulitanit U LARGUAN, ne e KUPTUAM që lufta

2.3.1 B.2 Past Definite Tense Uses
ishte e pashmangshme. ’Toward the end (‘coming out’) of winter, when the Sultan’s delegates DEPARTED, we realized (‘UNDERSTOOD’) that the war was unavoidable.’

Ata na BËNË githfarë presionesh që ne të pranonim vasalitetin. ‘They exerted (‘MADE’)-all sorts-of pressures on us to accept vassalage.’

Past definite forms are often accompanied by a temporal indication that excludes the moment of speaking. Such an indication may be made by a temporal adverb marking a specific moment or period of time in the past: dje ‘yesterday’, pardi ‘the day before yesterday’, jët ‘last year’, paryjet ‘the year before last’, atëherë ‘then’, etc., or phrases of the type atë ditë ‘that day’, atë vit ‘that year’, para dy ditësh ‘two days ago’, para një javë ‘a week ago’, etc.

If the definite action indicated by the past definite form extended over a period of time, the temporal indication may be an adverbial like kurrë ‘never’, tërë jetën ‘throughout life, for a lifetime’, etc., or may be made by repeating the verb:

Ai PUNOIS TËRË JETËN për lirinë e atdhëut dhe KURRË nuk U TREMB nga kërënhëmet dhe ndjekjet e armlqve. ‘He WORKED ALL [HIS] LIFE for the freedom of the country, and WAS NEVER FRIGHTENED by the threats and persecutions of enemies.’

ATË DITË Xha Demi U HENGËR ë U THER me vetveten më shumë se ç’e kish bërë të tjera herë. ’THAT DAY unde Demi quarreled with (‘ATE’) and kicked (‘PRICKED’) HIMSELF much more than he had other times.’

Po THERI e THERI sultan qëni me dorë të xhelatëve të tij. ‘The dog of a Sultan used his executioners to keep up the killing (‘SLEW and SLEW by the hand of his executioners’).’

The past definite may be used to express thoughts with a timeless value. One such usage is found in popular sayings. In such a case the distinction in meaning between the past definite and present indicative (see Section 2.3.1 A) is inoperative; in some of these cases, the two tenses are thus interchangeable:

Kush MËNGOI, BLOI. ‘He who GOT UP EARLY, MILLED.’

Nuk U LODHE sit, do të mundohesh mot. ‘If you do not labor (‘GOT TIRED’) today, you will toil next year.’

PUNOÆ? GEZOE; HËNGRE fikun, vish leshaikun. ‘DID YOU LABOR? YOU REJOICED (from the fruit of your labor); [if] YOU ATE THE FIG, put on the woolen cloak (the winter season is upon you).’

The past definite may be used when a future event is involved:

1) When the speaker represents as an accomplished fact some activity that is intended to be realized in the immediate future:

<< Largohu, se ti HODHA zorër në majë të plepit>> më thotë i paturpshmi. ‘Scram, or I’ll SPILL your guts (‘or to you I THREW the guts on top of the poplar tree’), the shameless one says to me.’

Herë-herë shoferi i ngadalësonte shpejtësinë dhe bërëtiste me të madhe: << Hapuni, se ju SHTYPAL;>> ‘From time to time the chauffeur decreased the speed and cried out forcefully (‘with the big’) “make way (‘open up’), or I’ll run you over” (‘I TRAMPLED you’).’

Értha -- thirri Batoja dhe vrapoi me shishën në dorë. ‘I’m coming (‘I CAME’)!” yelled Bato, and he ran with bottle in hand.’

-- IKA, -- tha mjeku dhe u ngrit -- mund të vij prapë. ‘I’m going (‘I WENT’),” the doctor said, and he got up. “I may come again.”’

Do të vij, premtoj TITI, -- sa të nbarj punë, ÉRTHA. ‘I shall come, Titi promised--as soon as I finish working, I will come (‘I CAME’).’

2) After the subordinating conjunction po, in antecedent clauses of conditional sentences. In this usage it is synonymous with the present subjunctive (see Section 2.3.3 A). In
such cases, the verb in the consequent clause is usually in the imperative or in the present or future indicative, but it may also be in the past definite used with the future sense as above:

"...and don't think ('recall') that we will beg you, "Please, Qano, be a council supervisor, because if you don't BECOME one, we're sunk ("the river took us")!"

In some sentences the past definite is interchangeable with the perfect:

**ERDH** ( = kam ardhur) të punë këtu në Maliq. 'I CAME (= have come) to work here in Maliq.'

Më THANË ( = kanë thënë) se keni kërkuar një mësues. THEY TOLD (= have told) me that you have been looking for (= have looked for) a teacher.'

**ERDH** ( = kam ardhur) për një punë të ngushme -- tha mjeku. "I CAME (= have come) on urgent business," said the doctor.'

NOTES

1. For the usage of the past definite in place of the pluperfect in dependent temporal clauses conjoined by means of the subordinating conjunctions si 'after, since', past 'since, because, after', see Point 5 below.

2. For the verbs jam and kam, the imperfect forms are sometimes used in place of the past definite. But it is not uncommon to observe the contrary phenomenon as well:

Imperfect

Jam këtu me inxhinier E.D., i cili ka përshijuar projektimin e parkut të Korchës. ISHTE (=QE) puna e tij e parë, mbasi kreu studimet. 'I am here with engineer E.D., who has outlined Korchë's park project. IT WAS his first job, after he completed his studies.'

-- ISHE (=QE) ti kur e çau shkëmbin? -- pyet një nga punëtorët dhe ne qeshim. "WERE YOU [present] when he split the rock?" asks one of the workers, and we laugh.'

-- Nuk ISHA (= QESHË) -- përgjigjet. -- Atë s'e kam parë. Por ty dhe Sabriu, ju pashë si e mbyllët grykën. "I WAS not", he answers. "I have not seen him. But I saw how you and Sabri closed off the gorge."

Past Definite

QE (= ishte) e thjeshtë ajo odë e vogël, e mësuesit, e lyer me gëlqerë. 'IT WAS simple, that little room of the teacher, white washed ("painted") with quicklime.'

Shtëpia QE (= ishte) e vogël, me dy të ndara e një çardhak në mes. 'The house WAS small, with two rooms ("partitions") and a veranda in the middle.'

Dhoma e zjarrit, ajo ku rrinin dimër e verë, QE (= ishte) me dysheme. 'The living room ("room of the fire"), the one where we stayed winter and summer, WAS [equipped] with a floor.'

B.3 Present Perfect Tense Uses

The basic use of the present perfect of the indicative mood is to indicate that the scope of time considered by the speaker includes both the past and the moment of speaking. By using this tense the speaker implicitly claims that an action has some connection with the present moment, although it began in the past. This is the basic difference between this tense and the past definite, by which the speaker claims only that the action terminated at a given point in the past. (See point 2. above.) For example, contrast these two tenses in the following sentence:

2.3.1 B.3 Present Perfect Tense Uses
Dhe kur hapej muhabeti për kurbetin, xha Teloja thoshte: -- Lipsur qoftë, se na HËNGRI gjithë djemtë e na KA DJEGUR zemrën. ‘And when the conversation turned to migration abroad, uncle Telo would say, “To hell with it, for it wasted (“ATE to us”) all [our] sons, and HAS SCORCHED our hearts.”

The past definite form HËNGRI ‘he ate’ indicates that the action of “eating up” of the boys by immigration had ended at the moment when Uncle Teloja said these words, whereas the perfect form KA DJEGUR ‘has burned’ indicates that the hearts of the people were still burning as a consequence of the immigration.

Specifically, the perfect is used:

1. When the past action is connected to the moment of speaking through its effect at the moment of speaking. In such cases the perfect:
   a) May be accompanied by no temporal marker:
      -- Ne KEMI MBETUR edhe pa komisar! -- tha Nurka. “We find ourselves (‘HAVE REMAINED’) even without a commissar!” said Nurka.
      -- Komandant Rrapoja KA PËRZËNË tre komisarë. -- tha Memoja. Komandant Rrapoja do të përgjigjet për këtë. “Commander Rrapo HAS DISMISSED three commissars,” said Memo. "Commander Rrapo will answer for this."
      E di që KE ARDHUR për dinamit. Isha në Maliq. ‘I know that YOU HAVE COME for dynamite. I was in Maliq.’
      -- Nga lufta e KANË PËSUAR? -- pyeti Vehblu. “Are they suffering because of the war (‘From the war THEY HAVE SUFFERED IT’)?” asked Vehbi.
      -- E kush S’E KA PËSUAR nga lufta? -- ia bëri përkthyes. “And who is not suffering (‘HAS NOT SUFFERED IT’) because of the war?” the interpreter replied.
   b) May be accompanied by a temporal marker that designates a particular period of time that includes the moment of speaking: sot ‘today’, sivjet ‘this year’, këto ditë ‘these days’, këtë javë ‘this week’, këtë muaj ‘this month’, këtë vit ‘this year’, etc.; që dje ‘since yesterday’, që vjet ‘since last year’, që atëherë ‘since then’ që atë ditë ‘since that day’, që atë javë (e gjer sot) ‘from that week (up to today)’
      -- Tani unë punoj duke kënduar. -- Ndaj KE NXJERRË shumë qymyr këto ditë -- e ngacmoi xha Jorgji, -- duket KE KËNDUAR shumë. Këta dëjëtë vjetë e fundit JANË ARRITUR suksesë të mëdhën. “Now I sing as I work.” “That’s why you have dug (‘EXTRACTED’) so much coal these days,” uncle George teased him, "apparently YOU HAVE SUNG a lot. Great successes HAVE BEEN ATTAINED during these past ten years."
   c) May be accompanied by a temporal marker designating an indefinitely long time:

E në është kështu, në këta damarë, KURRË gjaku i Shqipërisë sonë nuk KA LËVIZUR me një gjallëri dhe vrull si ky që kam para syve. ‘And if it is so, NEVER before has the blood of Albania coursed ("HAS MOVED") in these veins with a vitality and drive such as the one I am witnessing.’

Partia jonë e KA PASUR KURDOHERË në qendrën e vëmendjes së saj zhvillimin e shkollës sonë të re. ‘Our Party HAS ALWAYS had the development of our new school at the center of its attention.’

Ej, dëgjoni këtu: Këto janë sendet e kambialet e dëfësat e borxheve, që KEMI PAGUAR DENBABADEN, janë zgjebja që na KA NGRËNË TËRË JETËN. ‘Hey, listen here: These are the things and bank notes and debt certificates that WE HAVE PAID FOR AT SOME TIME; they are the scab that HAS EATEN AWAY at us all [OUR] LIFE.’

2. When an action begun in the past is still continuing at the moment of speaking. This
meaning of the perfect emerges from the context, which may have a temporal marker indicating either the starting point of the action, or the entire period from the beginning of the action up to the moment of speaking. The present indicative may also be used with this meaning (see Section 2.3.1.A).

Duhet ta dishe se KA TRE VJET që ma KA MOLEPSUR mola shplirin. ‘You should know that it’s been (“IT HAS”) THREE YEARS that the moth HAS INFECTED my soul.’

Dhe nëpër hangare të medha kombajnit KANË ÇELUR gojën e po gërhasin nё vapë. ‘And in the big hangars the combines HAVE OPENED [their] mouths and are snoring in the heat.’

In spoken Albanian, and sometimes in writing as well, a perfect form may appear where a past definite form would be expected:

C’të duhet ty sot se ku e KAM HEDHUR (= hodha) unë lumin atëherë? ‘What does it matter to you today where I crossed (“HAVE THROWN”) (=threw) the river at the time?’

I KAM PRERË (=preva) edhe udhën pardej dhe i JAM LUTUR (=u luta). ‘I even STOPPED (“HAVE CUT = I cut”) him on the road the day before yesterday, and BEGGED (“I HAVE PRAYED = prayed”) him.’

Dhe rrallë na kufton Konstandini, siç e di dhe ti vetë, o Nikodim, ndonëse nënë e tij, Maria, KA VDEKUR (=vdiq) me emrin e tij në gojë, dhe babait tonë iu cel për të një plagë. ‘And only rarely does Konstandin remember us; as you yourself know, Nikodim, even though his mother, María, died (“HAS DIED = died”) with his name on her lips, and a sore broke out on our father on account of him.’

The perfect, like the past definite, is also sometimes used like a future, when the speaker represents as an accomplished fact an action which has not yet begun:

Po e gjite librën që më ka humbrur, ta KAM FALUR (=do të fal). ‘If you find the book I’m missing, you can have it (“I HAVE OFFERED = I will offer it to you”).’

NOTE
The meaning of the doubly-compounded forms of the perfect have a meaning similar to that of the perfect, although they are usually employed exclusively for actions in the distant past:

NË Elbasan u KANË PASË THËNË surreta. ‘In Elbasan THEY HAVE called (“SAID”) them scarecrows.’

2.4 Past Perfect Tense Uses

The basic use of the past perfect is to indicate an action completed prior to a particular moment in the past. This completed action:

a) may be connected to the particular moment in the past by its results or by its continuation up to that moment:

Vetëm të nesërjen Dimi mendoi i qetë për ato që KISHIN NDODHUR. ‘Only on the next day did Dimi think calmly about what had HAPPENED.’

Al fillol të bindej se ISHTÊ KTHYER papritur e pakujtuar në një trung. ‘He began to be persuaded that he HAD BEEN TURNED suddenly and unexpectedly into a tree trunk.’

b) or it may be disconnected from that particular moment in the past:

Dimi provol të kuftonte se si dikur KISHTÊ HIPUR në një caracë, se si ISHTÊ VARUR te një degër dhe ISHTÊ HEDHUR prej saj e KISHTE RÊNÊ shëndoshë e mirë në tokë. ‘Dini tried to recall how at one time he HAD CLIMBED up on a hackberry tree, HAD DANGED from a branch and HAD JUMPED from it, and HAD FAL-
LEN, sound and healthy, to the ground.'

For both these cases, the meaning of past perfect is determined by context. In the first case, the past perfect has value of a perfect-in-the-past, whereas in the second, it has the value of a past-definite-in-the-past. This difference seems clearer in the two sentences below involving indirect discourse. If it is used in direct discourse, the verb will be in either the perfect or the past definite, depending on the temporal meaning:

"Pastaj njëri nga adjuntantë i solli raportin e komandantit të kampit, që lajmëronte se trupat KISHIN ARRITUR të gjitha sipas parashikimit, se ISHIN VENË roje kudo sipas rregullave, se ISHIN NXJERRÈ patrulla zbulimi në gjithë zonën dhe se gjithçka tjetër ishte kërjet në rregull. 'Then one of the adjutants brought to him the report of the camp's commander, announcing that all the troops HAD ARRIVED as foreseen, that guards HAD BEEN POSTED everywhere in accordance with the rules, that reconnaissance patrols HAD BEEN sent out ("BROUGHT OUT") throughout the zone, and that everything else was completely in order.'"

It we turn the content of the report of the comandant of the camp into direct discourse, then all of the verbs in capitals above are in the perfect:

"Raporti i komandantit të kampit njofton: << Trupat KANË ARRITUR të gjitha sipas parashikimit, JANË VENË roje kudo sipas rregullave, JANË NXJERRÈ patrulla zbulimi në gjithë zonën dhe gjithçka tjetër është kërjet në rregull. >> 'The report of the camp's commander notes: 'The troops HAVE all ARRIVED as foreseen, guards HAVE BEEN POSTED everywhere in accordance with the rules, reconnaissance patrols HAVE BEEN SENT OUT throughout the zone, and everything else is completely in order.'"

"Mirëpo miqë e tij të ngushtë KISHIN THËNË se në vendin, ku ai shkonte, ishte vështrim të kapje robina. 'However, his close friends HAD SAID that in the place where he was going, it was difficult to capture female slaves.'"

"Mirëpo miqë e mi të ngushtë, MË THANË: -- << NË vendin, ku po shkon, është vështrim të kapsh robina. >> 'However, my close friends TOLD ME: At the place where you are going, it is difficult to capture female slaves.'"

In both these uses, the past perfect may be accompanied by a temporal adverbial, such as an adverbial prepositional phrase like që atë dâtë 'since that day', në atë kohë 'at that time'; që atë herë 'until then'; an adverbial nominal phrase like atë vit 'that year', atë vërë 'that summer', or by an adverbial subordinate clause (usually introduced by the subordinating conjunction para se 'before'). But the temporal setting may be implied from what has been said before and then need not be expressed:

"ATË VERË toka KISHTE MARRË zgjarr nga aksionet e njësiteve guerile. 'THAT SUMMER the land HAD caught ("TAKEN") fire from the actions of the guerrilla units.'"

"Gjithë jetën ISHIN PËRFJEKUR qysh e qysh të copëtònin Shqipëri tërë dhe ISHIN BËRË aq të zanatit në kërë punë, sa s'ja priste mendja. 'All their life THEY HAD TRIED by all means to partition unluckily ("black") Albania, and HAD BECOME so clever at this job that you can't imagine.'"

"Po GJER ATË DITË asnjë kështjellë, që KISHTE SULMUAR, nuk u KISHTE QENDRUAR artilerisë dhe goditjes së ushtrisë turke. 'But UNTIL THAT DAY not a single castle that he HAD ATTACKED HAD WITHSTOOD the artillery and attack of the Turkish army.'"

"Kronikanin porsa e KISHTE ZËNË gjumi, KUR U ZGJUJA NGA BRTMAT E PARA TË ALARMIT. 'The chronicler HAD just FALLEN asleep ("the sleep HAD CAUGHT him") when he was awakened by the first cries of the alarm.'"

NOTES
Chapter 2

Verbs and Verbal Phrases

1. The past perfect is used occasionally, especially in the spoken language, with the value of the conditional perfect in the consequent clause of conditional sentences:

Të mos të kisha në vathë time, të KISHA VRARË (= do të të kisha vrarë) 'Were you not living in my home ("if I did not have you in my hearth"), I WOULD HAVE KILLED you ("I HAD KILLED you = I would have killed you").'

2. The doubly-compounded form of the past perfect occurs most commonly in northern dialects; in the standard language it is rarely encountered. It is used to indicate the completion of an action prior to a far-distant moment in the past:

-- Ëshhtë e vëmja brengë, që më mbetet -- shqiptoi më qartë ai, pasi kishëte folur një copë herë, në mënirë të ngatërruar, për një vajzë të bukur dhe inteligjente, me të cilën e KISHIN PASË FEJUAR prindët qysh në fémiqijëri. "It is the only grief that remains to me," he enunciated more clearly, after talking a while in a confused manner about a beautiful and intelligent girl, to whom his parents HAD ENGAGED him since infancy.'

B.5 Pluperfect Tense Uses

The basic meaning of the pluperfect is to indicate an action completed before a particular point in the past. In this sense it is synonymous with the past perfect:

-- Zeqoja u vra! -- thirri Hodo Allamani. -- Jo more! -- ia bërë komendant Rrapoja dhe pshëctëti ngaqalë -- Fili, o Zeqo vëlla! -- Ëshhtë dragua, -- PATËN FOLUR disa. Nga ata që lindin me fletë dhe ngrihen natën vjedhurazi e luftojnë me kuçdren. Po, ra kështjella e kështjellave që kurrë s'e PAT SHKELUR këmbë armiku. "Zeqo has been ("was") killed!" yelled Hodo Allamani. "Oh, no!" Commander Rрапо said, and sighed slowly. "Sleep, brother Zeqo!" He is a dragon," several HAD SAID, "of the type that are born with wings and arise secretly at night and battle the monster. Yes, the castle of castles fell, that enemy foot HAD never TROD."

Of these two synonymous grammatical forms the past perfect is much more common in present-day Standard Albanian. This is in accordance with the general displacement of the past definite forms (e.g., qe and pat) of the verbs jam and kam by those of the imperfect (e.g. ishte and kishte). However, as the following examples attest, there is still some vacillation between the two:

Andrea Borova shikonte punën e vet, atë punë për të cilën ishte lodhur e shqetësuar muaj të tërë. Në fillim PAT MARRË një tog me baltë, pastaj e KISHTË HEDHUR (=pat heddur) atë mbi një skelet të hekur. 'Andrea Borova tended his job, that job which had tired and preoccupied him months on end. In the beginning he HAD TAKEN a pile of mud, then HAD THROWN it over an iron frame.'

Ishte një dite e diel. Rrujtorja e Beshettit QE (=ishte) MBUSHUR plot e përplot me njerëz. 'It was a Sunday. The barber shop of Beshet HAD BEEN (= was) FILLED to capacity with people.'

E ngaqeshërimi im ishte aq i madh sa ftytëra më QE (= ish) NGUROSUR e gjendja lme shpirtëlore prej kalamani e kishët kaluar atë cakun e njohur të tronditjes, kur lotët nuk dalin më. 'And my anguish was so great that my face HAD BEEN (= was) PETRI-PIED, and my infantile spiritual state had passed that well-known point of agitation when tears no longer flow.'

NOTE

In subordinate temporal clauses, introduced by the subordinating conjunction si ‘as’ or past ‘after’, the past definite is not uncommonly used in place of the pluperfect:

Si IKU kamarieri, të dy shokët vazhindan për një kohë të gjatë të qeshnin me njeri tjetrin. 'After the waiter LEFT, the two continued to smile at one another for a long time.'

2.3.1 B.5 Pluperfect Tense Uses
In current Albanian, the pluperfect is also used, though rarely, like a perfect subjunctive to express an action which *might* have been completed prior to the moment of speaking. With this meaning, it is found in subordinating conditional clauses introduced by the subordinating conjunction po ‘if’ (compare the similar use of the past definite in such constructions, as discussed above):

Veç haram e pasç gjirin, që tê kam dhënë, po u ŁATE RRËFYER ti. ‘Cursed be the milk I have fed you, if you have told them (“may you have the breast forbidden, which I have given you, if you HAD TOLD them.”).’

2.3.2 Admiration Mood Uses

In general, the admiring mood is used to express reality accompanied by the speaker’s sense of surprise at an unexpected action which has taken place in the past or is taking place at the moment of speaking. If the speaker wishes to express surprise at the failure of an action to take place in the past or at the moment of speaking, the admiring form is preceded by one of the negative proclitics nuk or s’:

-- Ç' ju PASKA NGJARË, more djem? “What [in the world] HAS HAPPENED to you, boys?”

Dhe unë S’PASKAM DITUR gjë! Na matufespi ky i uruar mull! ‘And I really didn’t know (“HAVEN’T KNOWN”) a thing! This blessed mill has benumbed us!’

Through use of the admiring mood, the speaker may also express his doubt or dissent, and sometimes irony as well, related to what someone else says:

Ç’janë këto akuza monstroze, këto trajtime prej tregtari ndaj Partizanë sonë, popullit tonë dhe një vendi socialist, i cili U HUMBKA dhe U FITUAKA si një lojë bixhozi?

Ç’ janë këto konsiderata për një parti motër, e cila sipas jush, QENKA hallkë e doët në lëvizjen komuniste ndër kombëtare? ‘What kind of monstrous accusations are these, these commercial attitudes toward our Party, our people, and a socialist country, which are now ALLEGEDLY TO BE LOST and WON like a gambling game?! What kind of considerations are these for a sister party which, according to you, IS SUPPOSED TO BE a weak link in the international communist movement?!’

In addition to a present tense the admiring mood has three past tenses: imperfect, perfect, and past perfect. On rare occasions a future form constructed of do të plus the present admiring of the type do të lakam ‘I will actually wash!’ may also occur:

Gëzimin e fshtarëve ato ditë të vitit 1945 e shtoi edhe një lajm tjetër i madh: Kuvendi Popullor paska dekretuan që në maj reformën e plotë agrare e në vjeshtën e këtij viti DO T’U BËKAN ndarje të reja në Grykas. ‘Another great piece of news increased the joy of the villagers in those days of the year 1945. The People’s Assembly actually decreed total agrarian reform since May, and in Autumn of this year will implement (“MAKE TO THEM”) new [land] distributions in Grykas!’

A. Present Tense Admiring Uses

The basic use of a verb in the present tense of the admiring mood is to express the surprise of the speaker toward an action that continues to be realized at the moment of speaking. With this meaning, the present admiring may be accompanied by the momentive particle po:

-- QENKENI invalid, -- ha Sokratë, pasi vuri re të ecirit e rëndë të qytetarit të ri me shkrop. ‘YOU REALLY ARE an invalid!’ said Sokrat, after he noticed the clumsy (“heavy”) gait of the new townsman.

E ky...PO e HËNGËRKA me gjithë tavë. ‘And this one...He IS EATING it with the whole casserole [to boot]!’
Chapter 2

Verbs and Verbal Phrases

The present admitative is also used to express the surprise of the speaker toward an action that is repeated time after time. In such a case, like the present indicative (see Section 2.3.1 A), it is not accompanied by the particle po:

— Ah! Eiqiri, si NDRYSHUAKA njeriu kaq shpejt! ‘Ah, Eiqiri, how quickly a human being DOES CHANGE!’

B. Imperfect Tense Admitative Uses

The imperfect of the admitative is used to express the surprise of the speaker toward a particular action operating at a particular moment in the past. In such cases it may be accompanied (though rarely) by the particle po:

Atë ditë astronomët bënë flalë për një kometë, që PO IU AFRUAKËSH tokës me shpejtësi të madhe. ‘That day the astronomers spoke ("were making words") of a comet that SUPPOSEDLY WAS APPROACHING the earth at great speed.’

Like the present admitative, the imperfect may also be used to express the surprise of the speaker toward an indefinite action which is repeated time after time in the past. In such cases the verb is never accompanied by the particle po:

Thonë se kishte qëlluar nga vendi i kozakëve dhe kozakët, me ç’më kanë dëgjuar veshhë, QËNKESHIN klorës të prapë dhe e PËRDOMKËSHIN lakun për të zënë pela të egra, më keq sec e përdornin turqit në ato kohëra për të varur njëfizinë. ‘They say that he had come from the land of the Cossacks, and from what my ears have heard, the Cossacks REALLY WERE cunning horsemen, and ACTUALLY USED the lasso to capture wild mares, worse than the Turks who used it in those days to hang people.’

C. Admitative Perfect Tense Uses

The admitative perfect is used to express the surprise of the speaker toward an action whose time scope includes both the past and the moment of speaking:

-- QËNKE NGRITUR në këmbë! Po më çudit. ‘“You’re standing up ("YOU HAVE BEEN RAISED to foot")! You surprise me.”’

Këtij paska kohë që i PASKA DALË narkozë. ‘It’s been quite a while since the narcotic wore off this one ("HAS ACTUALLY COME OUT of him").’

Njeri i çuditshëm! Unë tani dua të shpresoj me gjithë shpirt, për gjithë botën! Zemra nuk më PASKA LËNË! ‘A strange man! Now I want to hope with all my soul for the whole world! My heart HAS not LEFT me!’

Paskam fuqi të përpiqem! -- Vërtet? -- pyeti ajo e habitur. -- Po ne si s‘e PASKEMI MARRË vesh? ‘“I do have the strength to try!” “Really?” she asked, surprised. “And how is it that we HAVE SOMEHOW not heard ("TAKEN ear") about it?!”

D. Past Perfect Admitative Uses

The past perfect of the admitative is used to express the surprise of the speaker toward an action that took place prior to a particular moment in the past:

-- Po atë Memon e PASKËSHIN PLAGOSUR, se ia pashë emrin në ato afishe. ‘But THEY HAD ACTUALLY WOUNDED that Memo guy, because i saw his name on those posters.’

Tani e kuptonte se e PASKËSH DASHUR minjerën me gjithë forcën e zemrën, dhe ndofta, u desh kjo provë e vështrë dhe kjo ndarje që të shkojste një gjë kaq të thjeshtë. ‘He understood now that HE HAD INDEED LOVED the mine with all the strength of his heart, and perhaps this difficult test and this separation was necessary, [in order for him] to unravel so simple a thing.’

2.3.2 D. Past Perfect Admitative Uses 77
2.3.3 Subjunctive Mood Uses

The subjunctive mood is basically the mood that indicates dependency of the verb. In most sentences a subjunctive verb form will be preceded by an antecedent modal, verb, adjective, adverb, conjunction, noun, or particle to which it is subjoined. Used without such an expressed antecedent, the subjunctive conveys dependence on the speaker’s will, and may thus be used by itself to express the speaker’s desire for an action, in contrast with the indicative which affirms the independent reality of the action. Using subjunctive forms, other moods may be formed by using various antecedents to express possibility, desirability, or obligation, for example. In English, when the verb is dependent in this way, an infinitive form, with or without the proloclic to, is often used; in Gheg dialects of Albanian similar constructions use the infinitive with the proloclic me; but in present-day standard Albanian, finite subjunctive forms of the verb indicating the person and number of the subject are used instead:

Në rendin tonë socialist, ashtu siç organizohen puna dhe riprodhimi i zgjeruar socialist, krahas tyre duhet TË ORGANIZOHEN edhe shkolla dhe edukata, që këto TË PËRGRJIGJEN nevojave objektive të socializmit dhe komunizmit, që eksperienca e prodhimit T’I SHËRBEJË mendimit, që zhvillimi i materies TË SQAROJË mendimin dhe ky TË UDHEHEQË e TË NDIMHOJË zhvillimin e praktikës revolucionare, zhvillimin dhe transformimin e shoqërisë. ‘In the same way that labor and expanded socialist reproduction are organized in our socialist order, [so also] must the school and education BE ORGANIZED alongside them, that these MAY ANSWER to the objective needs of socialism and communism, that the experience of production MAY SERVE thought, that the development of matter MAY CLARIFY thought, and that this [i.e. thought] MAY GUIDE and AID the development of revolutionary practice, the development and transformation of society.’

-- Qofte jotja, o bir, edhe tjetër herë TË të VEJË trimërria mbarë! ‘May it be yours, son, and MAY your serve you ("GO FOR YOU") well next time.’

Pa mua plakut le TË më MBETET kjo! -- dhe njriti xha Mitë përjetë bishtin e qepës. “Just let this be mine ("THAT IT REMAIN to me") as an old man!” and uncle Miti raised the green part (the tail of the onion.)

Following are examples which illustrate the contrast in modality between verbs a) in the indicative and b) in the subjunctive:

a) Mësuesit i zhurmoi në veshë përseri ato natë. Dhe sa herë KALON këtej, ajo zhurmon e zhurmon. ‘It buzzed in the teacher’s ears again on those nights. And whenever HE PASSES BY this way, it buzzes and buzzes.’

b) Ne do të bëjmë që, sa herë që TË VIJË koha e korrijeve dhe e ditëve të lëmit, ju të shikonë qelllin sikur të ishte... ‘We will act in such a manner that, whenever reaping and threshing time MAY COME, you will look at the sky as if it were...’

a) Nganjëherë në vendet më të ngushta të saj trupat blokoheshin për një kohë të gjatë, gjersa xhenierët HAPIN ndonjë shishtë ndihmës për të përbballuar dyndjen e papërë. ‘Sometimes in its narrowest places the troops would be blocked for a long time, until the engineers OPENED an auxiliary passage so as to resist the incessant movement [of enemy forces].’

b) Ai vendosë të qëndronte, gjersa mjeku TA SHIKONTE. ‘He resolved to stay until the doctor WOULD SEE HIM.’

a,b) SI KAM PIRË e si KAM KËNDUAR atë ditë, or shokëni, s’di TË KEM PIRË e TË KEM KËNDUAR në jetën time. ‘The way I drank (‘I HAVE DRUNK’) and sang (“I
Chapter 2

Verbs and Verbal Phrases

HAVE SUNG') that day, my friends, I don't know WHETHER I (MAY) HAVE DRUNK or SUNG [like that] in my life.'

The subjunctive mood has a present tense and three past tenses: imperfect, perfect, and past perfect. In addition, each of these tenses may be preceded by do to form new tenses: future, past future, anterior future, and past anterior future.

A. Present Tense Subjunctive Uses

The present subjunctive is used after a variety of antecedents. After modal verbs it expresses the modality of possibility when preceded by the modal mund 'can, may, could'. To express obligation or necessity, the subjunctive form may be preceded by the modal duhet (or lipset) 'should, ought, must, have to', or by a word sequence that expresses the modality of obligation, such as ēshē e nevojshme 'it is necessary'.

After other verbs in the present tense as antecedent, the present subjunctive form may follow directly, or it may be preceded by an elucidating subordinating conjunction qē 'which, that', a conative subordinating conjunction qē or me qellim qē 'in order that', a temporal subordinating conjunction, such as si 'as', pasi 'after', kur 'when', sa 'as soon as', porsa 'just as', para se 'before', sa herē qē 'whenever', a locative subordinating conjunction, such as kudo qē 'wherever', ngado qē 'wherever, anywhere', ku 'where', nga 'from'; a conditional subordinating conjunction, such as po 'if', sikur 'if'; a concessive coordinating conjunction sado qē 'however much, no matter how much', sido 'no matter how, however', sido qē 'no matter how, however', edhe pse 'although, even though', edhe sikur 'even if', etc.; the oppositional subordinating conjunction nē vend qē 'instead of'; as well as by relative or interrogative conjunctions, such as qē 'that', l'ili 'who, which', kush 'who', ċ 'what', l'ili 'who', sa 'how'.

Vēshirē ēshē Tē ZBĒRTHESH shpiritën e njëriut. 'It is difficult TO UNRAVEL the soul of man.'

-- Kush je ti, njëherē, se nuk di TĒ KEM TĒ BĒJ me ty? -- hyri nē mes qiraxhiu. "Who are you, anyway, because I don't know that I have any business ('THAT I HAVE THAT I DO') with you?" the tenant interposed.'

-- Sado TĒ MASKOHESH, tē njohin, more byrazë! 'No matter how YOU MAY MASK YOURSELF, they recognize you, brother.'

Tani ēshē natē dhe njëriştë tanē, tē lodhur e tē këputur, kanē rënë TĒ FLÈNË. 'Now it is night and our people, and exhausted, have gone to SLEEP ('have fallen to SLEEP') ("have gone to sleep") twice, if you MAKE his eyes POP OUT.'

Asta do tē na sulmojnë, pasi tē na kenë lënë disa javë pa ujë dhe përpara se TĒ FILLOJNË shirat e shtatorit. 'They will attack us, after they have left us a few days without water, and before the rains of September begin ("MAY BEGIN").'

Detyn jënë ēshë TĒ MBAJMË në gjendje pune këto mjëte që kemi e jo TĒ BĒJMË ekspermentë, që TĒ na HÄNË kokën. 'Our duty is to maintain ("THAT WE MAIN- TAIN") in a working condition these tools that we have, and not to do ("THAT WE DO") experiments that would finish us off ("that MAY EAT the head to us")

E fjalën usta s'ia ëxjerr dot goja, sikur TĒ është JETË bujku usta në punë e tij. 'You would not get the word craftsman from his lips at all, if the farmer WERE not a craftsman in his work.'

Këtu ka qell sa TĒ DUASH. 'Here you have all the sky you could ("THAT YOU MAY") WANT.'

-- Komandant Rrapoja në vend qē TĒ LAJË hesapet me Sahil Protopapat, ēshē mbëllur në Gur-Kusar! 'Instead of settling ("THAT HE WASH") accounts with Sahil Protopapa, Commander Rrapo is cloistered in Gur-Kusar!'

2.3.3 A. Present Tense Subjunctive Uses
Me cîlîndo qê TÊ BISEDOSH, do tê na flasê pêr vêllanê e tîj... ‘Whoever YOU (MAY) TALK to will speak to us about his brother...’

NOTES


Une S’DUA T’U BESOJ syve se kam përpara një tê ri, qê sapo mbushë 6 vjet nê kërkimet gëzelgëske. ‘I DON’T WANT TO BELIEVE [my] eyes that I have before me a young man who just completed 6 years in geological research.’
‘Një xhade e posasafatuar tê FTON TÊ RRTÊSH shpejtesinë. ‘A newly asphalted road INVITES you to accelerate (THAT YOU ACCELERATE)’ the speed.’
Me tê hërë tê Lushnjës, hoteli i ri KËRKON TÊ BËJÊ me zor mysaftir. ‘On entering Lushnjë, the new hotel SEES to make (THAT IT MAKE) you a guest by force.’
Përmjet i ringjallur gërmendhash nuk tê LÊ TÊ HARROSH mizorite nazistë tê 1944-
ës. ‘Përmet resurrected from ruins won’t LET (THAT) you FORGET the Nazi atrocities of 1944.’

2. Especially in the spoken language, but sometimes also in writing, we find the present subjunctive used in place of the imperfect subjunctive. This occurs when it is used after verbs in the indicative imperfect, past definite, past perfect, or pluperfect, that is, after temporal forms not connected to the moment of speaking:

Me këtë ai i DHA TÊ KUPTOJÊ (=tê kuptonte) se duhej tê hynte nê pazarilëk me
njerëzit, qê kishët lenë pas. ‘By this he GAVE him TO understand (THAT THEY UNDERSTAND=UNDERSTOOD)’ that he should deal with the people he had left behind.’

Kur nisë lufta, fëqinjë, sa herë qê kishinndonjë lajm me rëndësi, SHKONIN te Stefañi qê TÊ SHOHIN (=tê shilhën) mbi hartat e tij se ku kish hërë gërmantë.
‘When the war began, the neighbors, whenever they had any news of importance,
WOULD GO to Stefan so as to see (THAT THEY SEE = WERE SEEING)’ on his maps where the German [foe] had entered.’

Ai, për cudî, nuk ishte nxehur e nuk PATI DHÊNÊ urdher T’I MARRIN (=t’i
mermin) e T’I COJNÊ (=t’i çonin) nê postë. ‘Surprisingly, he did not get upset, and
HAD not GIVEN orders for them to take (THAT THEY TAKE = WOULD TAKE
THEM)’ and DISPATCH them to the post office.’

Besides such optional cases, there are also occasions when the present subjunctive is obligatory after the past definite: when the time of operation of the action designated by the subjunctive verb lies in the future with respect to the time of action of the antecedent verb, or when the past definite is interchangeable with the present perfect (see Section 2.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.1.3.
Chapter 2

Verbs and Verbal Phrases


-- Kush TE JETÊ kaq venë? -- jeeti doktori Mé têpêr venet sësa tê tjërët. “Who CAN IT BE this late?” asked the doctor more to-himself than-to-others.

E, o Sulejmën Tafili. Ç’fjalë T’I SHIPE tim eti? ‘Eh, Sulejman Tafil. What message am I to take (‘MAY I TAKE’) to my father?”

2. When it is used in interrogative clauses used as exclamations in which the speaker expresses a feeling of anger, protest, surprise, desire, etc.:

S’ke punë nê mbledhje ti, po rri aty e mos luaj nga shtëpla. -- Si? TÊ mos VETE? -- u kthye ajo me fytyrë nga i ati. ‘You’ve got no business at the meeting, so just stay put at home. “What? (THAT) I not GO?” she replied, with her face toward her father.’

-- Gjer këtu TÊ ARRÎJÊ njeriu, more vëllezër? -- ai e tundë nagantin nê dorë. ‘Is it possible, brothers, that man should reach this point (‘until here THAT MAN ARRIVE’)? He shook the revolver in [his] hand.’

-- I plagosur! Ku TA NJOHÊSH! -- i tha mësues. ‘Wounded! How can one tell (‘where do YOU RECOGNIZE IT’)” the teacher said to him.’

JUSSIVE mood is a term that conveys the desirability or obligation expressed by the present subjunctive when it is used:

1. with the value of a mild imperative (to order, incite, urge, advise, propose, etc.) It is used with this value not only in the second person singular and plural, but also with or without a proclitic le ‘let’ in the first person plural ("Let’s___," "Shall we___") and the third person singular and plural ("Let her___," "Have them___", etc.) which otherwise have no special imperative forms:

-- Po ç’të buj tjetër? -- TÊ KËRKOSH kopertonë e T’I GJESH ku të jenë. “But what else can I do?" "[YOU SHOULD] LOOK for tires and FIND THEM wherever they may be.”

Le TA MARRÊ vesh Salih Protopapa se cilët jemi ne. ‘LET Salih Protopapa find out (‘TAKE ear’) who he is dealing with (‘who we are’).’

Është kohë bereqet, LE TÊ RRÎNË ky drapër dhe këta kallnj gruri pranë Memos, se, që thoni ju, Mënja e donte edhe draprin edhe grurin. ‘It is harvest time, LET this sickle and these ears of grain REMAIN by Memo, because as you know, Memo loved both sickle and grain.’

-- Po errësoset -- ha Rustemi, TÊ VENDOSIM se ku do të shkojme sonte. “It is getting dark,” said Rustem, ‘LET’S DECIDE where we will go tonight.’

TÊ RRÎMÊ shtrembër e TÊ PLASIM drejt. ‘LET’S SIT CROOKED(LY) but (‘and’) SPEAK straight.’

Me venet e tij LE TÊ TALLET, por Naimin TÊ mos e PREKÊ. ‘LET HIM KID himself but not TOUCH Naim.’

2. with no antecedent to express a hope or desire of the speaker, with very much the same value as the optative mood:

Po s’ka gajle, TÊ na RROJNÊ djemtë, dhe me çupa pas, urova me vete, kur pashë Dafinën e dajë Shalinait. “But it doesn’t matter, [long] LIVE our boys, and with daughters hereafter, I said (‘wished’) to myself, when I saw uncle Shabin’s Dafine.’

Hajt fazebardhë! TÊ RROJÊ Partia, shokë! Përpara! ‘Well, good luck! MAY the Party LIVE [ON], comrades! Forward!’

2.3.3 A. Present Tense Subjunctive Uses
B. Past Tense Subjunctive Uses

B.1—Imperfect Tense Subjunctive Uses

Imperfect subjunctive forms are used after the same variety of antecedents as the present subjunctive, except that an antecedent verb must be in a past rather than present tense. Where the English equivalent for the present subjunctive is often may, can, or shall plus verb, for the past imperfect subjunctive it is often might, could, or should plus verb. The imperfect subjunctive is used, then, in the majority of those cases where the present subjunctive is used (see Section 2.3.3 A), but only after those temporal forms that are not tied to the moment of speaking; that is, after the past definite, the imperfect, the past perfect, and the pluperfect:

Leksi DESHI TË PËRGJIGJEJ, po s’pati kohë. ‘Alex WANTED to reply ("THAT HE WAS REPLYING"), but did not have time.’

S’DONTE gjë tjetër veçë TË ZGJASTE një cikë kjo qetësi e vogël, TË ZGJASTE sa TË MERRTE një herë frymë, TË NGOPEJ me ajër dhe TË VENDOSTE. ‘HE DID NOT WANT anything else except that this little quiet MIGHT LAST A bit, LAST until HE MIGHT once TAKE a breath, SATIATE HIMSELF with air and [then] DECIDE.’

Dhe e KISHIN RREGULLUAR ashtu që koka t’i BINTE mbi shpëndrat e rrëçës së fikut. ‘And THEY HAD ARRANGED it in such manner that the head MIGHT FALL over the herbs at the foot of the fig tree.’

Piloja shikonte t’emën, që VINTE anës nëpër shtëpi, sikur TË mos GJENTE derën nga TË DILTE dhe çaponte e zbërhente nofullat, pa ditur ku TË FUSTE zemërtimin. ‘Pilo was watching his mother, who WAS GOING ("along the side of") the house, as if SHE COULD not FIND the door from which SHE COULD EXIT, and was fuming and clenching her jaws, without knowing where TO VENT ("SHE SHOULD INSERT") her anger.’

Një krismë, para se TË HIQTE këmbëzën e pushkës, buçiti. ‘A shot rang out, before HE COULD PULL the trigger of the gun.’

As kosovari s’do të ndihje më, kur TË MERRTE vesh që Vita KISHTJE DASHUR TË ABRATISEJ me një të panjohur. ‘Even the Kosovar would not stir any more when he learned ("TOOK ear") that Vita HAD WANTED to escape ("THAT SHE MIGHT ESCAPE") with a stranger.’

Po TË DËGJONTE zemërën, a nuk ISHTË një sikur TË DËGJONTE botën, botën që ndjen e atë që s’ndjen! ‘If HE WERE to LISTEN to his heart, WOULD IT not BE the same as if HE WERE LISTENING to the outside world, the world that feels and the one that doesn’t feel’.

Bujkut në vend që T’I MERREJ fryma, sikur i ERDHIZ zemra në vend. ‘Instead of the farmer losing his breath, ("the breath WOULD BE TAKEN FOR HIM") [it seemed] as if his heart regained its balance ("to him the heart CAME in place").’

DONTË TË TËRHIQEJ, para se TË BINTE. ‘HE WANTED TO WITHDRAW, before HE FELL.’

Por, edhe sikur TA VININ re, nuk DO TË ISHIN në gjendje TË NDIQININ dot kafshët. ‘But even if THEY noticed it ("WOULD PUT attention") they WOULD not HAVE BEEN in a position to pursue ("THAT THEY MIGHT PURSUE") the animals.’

DUHEJ TË NDËRHYNTE ndonjë tjetër, ndonjë që TË ISHTÉ pak i jashtëm. ‘Someone else SHOULD HAVE INTERVENED, someone who MIGHT BE a bit of an outsider.’

The imperfect subjunctive is used with the specific sense of past possibility or obligation:

1. When it is preceded by the modal mund (either in its invariable form or in one of its past tense forms (except the perfect) or the modal duhet in one of its past tense forms (except the perfect). Its use after the present tense of duhet is to be avoided in standard Albanian:
Chapter 2

Verbs and Verbal Phrases

Nuk MUND TË GJEJE shenjë nga trupi i tij dhe nga mitralozi, sepse çdo gjë ishte zhdukur. ‘You COULD not FIND a trace of his body and of the machine gun, because everything had disappeared.’
Ne MUNDËN TË-KALONIM-megjithëse të lodhur, të këputur. ‘We WERE ABLE TO CROSS IT, eventhough tired, exhausted.’
Po edhe në vend nuk DUHEJ TË QËNDRONIM. ‘But WE SHOULD not HAVE STOOD STILL (‘IN PLACE’) either.’
Për të arritur në këto fitore të mëdhba, popullit shqiptar IU DESH TË BENÈTE sakrifica të mëdhba. ‘In order to achieve these great gains, the Albanian people had to (“TO IT WAS NEEDED”) make great sacrifices.’

2. When it is used in direct interrogative clauses, with or without an antecedent interrogative word:

SI TË QËNDRONTE në një shtëpi tok me atë? ‘HOW COULD HE STAY (“HOW THAT HE MIGHT STAY”) in a house together with him?’
Konxheja nuk foli më. E Ç'TE FLISTE? ‘Konxhe did not speak any more. WHAT COULD SHE SAY?’
Po ME SE TË SHKONTE? ‘But how (“WITH WHAT”) COULD SHE GO?’

3. When it is used in interrogative or declarative exclamatory clauses, expressing anger, protest, surprise, desire, etc.:

E ku T'IE SHKONTE asaj në mendje se një ditë do të takohj me të papritur e papandehur! ‘And how could she imagine (“where TO HER WOULD IT BE GOING in mind”) that one day she would meet him suddenly and unexpectedly!’
Kur Ç'TE SHIKOJE? ‘What a sight that was (“When WHAT YOU MIGHT BE SEEING”)!’
IU derdh ky Bogdani si qen stani. Mirë nga dera e prindit doli ashtu si doli, po në prak të Adilit si TË SHKELTE këshut! ‘This Bogdan guy rushed at him like a sheepdog. Granted he came out of his parent's door as he did, but how COULD HE STEP over the threshold of Adil like this!’
Sikur TË KISHIM proteza! Unë do t'u mësoja se si të ecmnin për së dyti. ‘If WE [ONLY] HAD the prostheses! I would teach them how to walk again.’

In hypothetical sentences, the antecedent clause, whether introduced by a subordinating conjunction po (or sikur) ‘if’ or not, often uses an imperfect subjunctive form to express a counterfactual condition, that is, one which the speaker supposes to have little or no possibility of being realized (see Section 2.3.7 C below).

Unë, o Sulejman Tafili, do t'i duroja më fort, po TË më LËSHOHESHN pa atë djall pipërime. ‘I, oh Sulejman Tafil, could stand them better, if they WERE TO UNLEASH THEMSELVES ON ME without that devilish squeaking.’
Po hane sa mirë do të na vinte, po TA GJENIN nga ne, bujqëria. ‘But how well we would have felt long ago, if they had been punished by (“THEY WERE TO FIND IT from”) us, the peasantry.’
Ti ke të drejtë të çuditesh -- tha kryeveqilharxhi. -- Edhe unë, po TË ISHA në vendin tend, këshuth do të çuditesh. ‘You are right to be surprised," said the chief advocate. "I, too, if I WERE in your place, would be surprised.”

NOTE

Instead of the regular form of the imperfect subjunctive of the verb jam (të isha, të ishe, etc.), in colloquial and occasionally in written Albanian sub-standard forms like të qeshë, të qe, etc., are encountered:

Dhane e morën, e kthyen mbarë e prapë atë të flamouar qështë, sikur TË QE (= të ishte) pe e s'futej dot në vrimën e gëlpërs. ‘They tried this tack and that, they turned that unfortunate language forward and backward, as if IT WAS thread that could not go through the eye of the needle.’

2.3.3 B.1 Imperfect Tense Subjunctive Uses

83
B.2 Subjunctive Present Perfect Tense Uses

The perfect subjunctive may be preceded by the modal mund in its invariable form (see Section 2.3.7 B.3) to indicate possibility in a way that corresponds to English may have + participle. When it is preceded by the modal duhet in its present tense form, the verb in the perfect subjunctive may, like English is or (are) supposed to have + participle, express the modality of surmised obligation (=English should have + participle) or surmised probability (=English must have + participle):

Një kompani prej 47 vetëm ka ardhur në Malin e Brate dhe MUND TË JETË HEDHUR nga Smokthina. ‘A company of 47 persons has arrived on Brat Mountain and MAY HAVE left (“BEEN THROWN”) for Smokthine.’

Sot DUHET TA KENË VARROSUR. DUHET TË KETË QENË mbarimi i marsit ose fillimi i prilit 1915. ‘Today THEY MUST HAVE BURIED IT. IT MUST HAVE BEEN the end of March or the beginning of April, 1915.’

Skënderi më tha se ata MUND TË KENË ARDHUR për punë të kanallit. ‘Skënder told me that they MAY HAVE COME in regard to the canal.’

The perfect subjunctive also occurs without an antecedent: in subject clauses and object complement clauses; after verbs in the present indicative that express the will or attitude of the speaker (see Section 2.3.7 B.3); in subordinate clauses introduced by one of the temporal conjunctions kur ‘when’, si ‘after’, pasi ‘after’, etc.; one of the locative conjunctions kudo që ‘wherever’, ngado që ‘from all sides, wherever’; clauses introduced by one of the conditional conjunctions po ‘if’, sikur ‘if’; or by one of the concessive conjunctions sado ‘no matter how much’, sado që ‘no matter how much’, sido ‘no matter how’, sido që ‘no matter how’, edhe sikur ‘even if’, etc:

Ka rezik që Salih Protopapa TË KETË ZENË grykat. ‘There is a danger that Salih Protopapa MAY HAVE SEIZED the passes.’

Ka mundësi që qysh atëherë ata TË KENë MARRë të dhënat e para për ekzistencën e ujësjellësit tonë. ‘There is the possibility that since that time they MAY HAVE GOTTEN the first data on the existence of our aqueduct.’

Pyesin sikur ne TË KEMI ARDHUR këtu për të bërë sehir. ‘They ask as if we (MAY) HAVE COME here [just] to watch.’

Kështu kanë thënë e mund të jetë e vërtetë se Zaganj e Mojsinj e Hamzanj ka pasur edhe në shtëpitë e tjera të zotërve tanë, dhe më vjen turp TË KETË DALË dhe një nga shtëpia e mënës sime. ‘This is what they have said, and it may be true that there have been Zaga and Moji and Hamza [types of people] even in other houses of our masters, and I feel ashamed tha even one MAY HAVE ARISEN from my mother’s house.’

Po, që T’I KETË VAJTUR mendja asaj apo mua se babai do të marrëndonjë dite pendën dhe të shkruajë një tregim...kurre. ‘But that IT MAY HAVE CROSSED her mind or mine that father would one day take up his pen and write a story...never.’

Po, kur TË KENI LEXUAR dhe këtë histori të dytë, do të shihni se ai... ‘However, when YOU (MAY) HAVE READ this second tale, you will see that he...’

Nën ujë gurët skuqin nga myshqet e leshterikët, sikur T’I KETË NGJYER dikush me bojë të kuqe. ‘Beneath the water the stones are red from the moss and seaweed, as if someone HAD PAINTED THEM with red paint.’

Do të bëj një fyell, që TË MOS E KEM BËRË kurre! ‘I will make a flute, such that I HAVE never MADE before!’

In temporal subordinate clauses, the perfect subjunctive may indicate a possible action that is prior to some point in the future, such as one indicated by a future tense verb in the controlling clause or by an adverbial referring to the future. In such a case, it is parallel to the anterior future indicative:
Kur TÊ KETÊ HYRÊ nê thêllêsi, ti do tê hapêsh zjarr dhe do tê zbresêsh nê bisht tê kolonês sê tyre. 'When IT HAS ENTERED deep within, you will open fire and descend on the tail [end] of their column.'

Atil do tê sulmojnê, pasi tê nê KENÊ LÊNÊ disa jave pa ujê. 'They will attack us, AFTER THEY HAVE LEFT us several weeks without water.'

Ai dha urdhêr qê soante TÊ KENÊ MBARUAR duajt sê lidhuri. 'He gave orders that by tonight THEY SHOULD HAVE FINISHED binding the sheaves.'

The perfect subjunctive is also used in interrogative or declarative exclamatory clauses, sometimes with the additional nuance of doubting:

TÊ KETÊ QENÊ Kozma? 'COULD it HAVE BEEN Kozma?'

Ta kesh kokên tênde dhe TÊ ta KETÊ RRÊMBYER tjetri? 'To have your head and [then to have] someone else GRAB IT from you?!

Thua t'i KETÊ MARRÊ malli i nêne, i gruas, i fêmljês? 'Do you suppose ("you say") they BECAME nostalgic ("that nostalgia MAY HAVE TAKEN them") for their families ("mother, wife, children").'

The perfect jussive tense, formed by the perfect subjunctive with or without the prodictive le, is occasionally used to express a mild imperative that is to be executed prior to a particular moment in the future:

Kjo punê TÊ KETÊ MARRÊ fund gjer nesêr! 'Let this job be completed ("THAT IT HAVE TAKEN end") by tomorrow!'

B.3 Subjunctive Past Perfect Tense Uses

The past perfect subjunctive, like the present perfect subjunctive, may be preceded by the antecedent modal mund in its invariant form, in which case it is equivalent to English might (or could) have + participle, expressing past possibility; or by the antecedent dhuêt in one of its imperfect forms, in which case it is equivalent to English was (were) supposed to or ought to have + participle, expressing past obligation:

Lirinê MUND TA KISHIT FITUAR me trimêrinê tuaj edhe menjêtetêr clirimtar.

'With your valor, you COULD HAVE WON liberty with another liberator as well.'

Ait mendoi se ç'aritekten MUND TA KISHTÊ PROJEKTUAR kêtê këshjellê. 'He pondered what architect COULD HAVE DESIGNED ("PROJECTED") this castle?'

Prapêseprapê dyshimi se MUND TÊ ISHIN ZBULUAR pres' këshjellarêve, u varej mbi koko. 'Just the same, the suspicion that they MIGHT HAVE BEEN DETECTED by the residents of the castle, hung over [their] heads.

Pat kaluar dreka dhe djaloshi DUJEH TÊ KISHTÊ MARRÊ nga lengu, qê doktorli ia pat dhêne kunder malarjes. 'Lunch time had passed, and the boy OUGHT TO HAVE TAKEN of the liquid against malaria that the doctor had given him.'

In the same types of subordinate clauses in which the present perfect subjunctive is used, the past subjunctive is used even more frequently. In conditional sentences the past subjunctive, introduced or not by a subordinating conjunction po (or sikur) 'if' is particularly common, as well as in subordinate clauses introduced by the subordinating conjunction sikur 'as if':

S'e zura dot, ke hak, se, po TA KISHA ZÊNÊ, e diya vetê. 'I didn't catch it at all, you're right, because if I HAD CAUGHT IT, I would know it myself.'

Sikur TÊ mos e KISHTÊ PARÊ Sania, Vita do tê kishte rendur anej nga ta çolin jo zemra, po kêmêbê. 'If Sania HAD not SEEN HER, Vita would have run over to where [her] feet, not heart, would take her.'

U kthonê anej vramuz, sikur TA KISHIN LIDHUR A RRAHUR me ata litarê, qê po kerkontê, e TA KISHIN HEQUR zvârrê nê ca rrugê të panjohura. 'He returned over there scowling, as if THEY HAD TIED OR BEATEN HIM UP with those ropes he was looking for, and HAD DRAGGED HIM along some unfamiliar streets.'
Verbs and Verbal Phrases

Chapter 2

Mimoza uli kokën nga turpi dhe gishtërinjtë, që i punonin shtizat, i pushuan menjëherë, sikur TË ISHTE PARALIZUAR. 'Mimoza bent her head down from embarrassment, and the fingers that worked the knitting needles, stopped all at once, as if SHE HAD BEEN PARALYZED.'

Unë mora në dorë shokun e vrarë, një pionier, që zor T'I KISHTË MBUSHUR të katërmbëdhjetat. 'I took in my arms the slain comrade, a pioneer, who barely HAD completed ("FILLED") [his] fourteenth [year].'

The past perfect is also encountered on rare occasions without an antecedent, especially to express a desire which can no longer be realized:

-- Si të harroj? Le që do ta gjesh në shkolën. TA KISHA GJETUR këtu! -- tha vajza -- S'më pelqen të mërzes gje të dynjanë. "How [can] I forget? Besides you will find it in school. I wish I had ('I SHOULD HAVE') FOUND IT here!" said the girl. "I don't like to bother everybody [about it]."

NOTE

The forms of the so-called subjunctive-admirative, constructed of the prolocitic të plus the imperfect admirative forms of an auxiliary plus a participle, have a restricted use in both colloquial and literary Albanian. In regard to use, it combines the meaning of the admiraive with the syntax of the imperfect subjunctive:

Poštë tufave të revë njyrë plumbi flutorijnë e sillën rrotull ca re të vogla, të zeza pis, sikur TË QENKESHIN tym prej dinamiti. 'Below the lead-colored cluster of clouds, there fly around and roam about a few small clouds, pitch-black, as if THEY ACTUALLY WERE dynamite smoke.'

Rë dhe u roinit e u shkri, sikur TË PASKESH QENË prej dëbore. 'It fell and crumbled and dissolved, as if IT WERE ACTUALLY [made] of snow.'

Sikur e gjuajtë TË mës PASKESH NXJERRË kokën nga gërja e TË mës Ë PASKESH THIRRUR, kushtë sa giatë do të kishte mbetur ashtu, më këmbë, në mes të shiut, që ishte shkurat mbi fushë. 'If his grandmother HAD not ACTUALLY STUCK her head OUT of the cart and HAD not ACTUALLY CALLED him, who knows how long he would have remained like that, standing, in the (midst of the) rain that had settled over the plain.'

C. Future Tense Uses

The basic use of future tenses, all constructed with do + a subjunctive verb form, is to indicate actions operative sometime after a point of reference. When that reference point is the moment of speaking and no ending time limit is given, the future subjunctive, constructed of do + present subjunctive, of the type do të bëj 'I will do', is usually used:

Unë ndjej kënaqësinë e rrallë që ta has këtu, majëskëmbit, tek vërtet në kokë projektidënë, duke soditur gër të ngrinatë, ku DO TË NGJITEN xhate të tjera, DO TË ÇELEN të tjera galeri, DO TË HIDHEN në erë shkëmbinjtë. 'I anticipate the rare pleasure that I may find it here, atop the rock, as I ponder the idea of the project in [my] head, while contemplating the crags and ravines, where other roads WILL CLIMB, other tunnels WILL BE OPENED, the rocks WILL BE blown up ("THROWN into the air").'

Constructions with some form of kam + infinitive of the type kam për të bërë, literally 'I have for doing', may be used with the same meaning as the future subjunctive, although in many instances they add to that meaning an implication of a present obligation to perform the action: in meaning it is thus either something like English will in will do or like have in have (something) to do. In the first case they are then sometimes equivalent to the future subjunctive of the type do të bëj, but more often, they are only partly synonymous with such a formation. In Gheg dialects the construction kam + infinitive (with me rather than për (të) is used instead of the future composed of do + present subjunctive.

86

2.3.3 C. Future Tense Uses
Chapter 2

Verbs and Verbal Phrases

a) Të jep fjallën e burrit se nuk KAM PËR të KALLËZUAR Adilin. 'I give you my word ("the word of the man") that I WILL not ACCUSE ("I DO NOT HAVE [REASON] TO ACCUSE") Adil.'

DO TË RRI shtrrrë në diellë gjithë ditën, DO TË CLODHÈM e robat KANË PËR T'U THARÈ. 'I WILL lie ("STAY" lying) in the sun all day, I WILL REST and the clothes WILL HAVE [TIME] TO DRY.'

Shokët KANË PËR Të më KËRKUAR. Me siguri do t'u shkojë mendja se janë lumë. 'The comrades WILL LOOK for me ("HAVE me TO LOOK FOR"). Assuredly they will think ("to them the mind will go") that I am in the river.'

b) Gruaja u ul në kolltuk, rregulloi flokët me duar dhe i tha djaloshi: -- Sot S'KE PËR TË SHKUAR në shkollë. DO TË MËSOJMË bashkë. 'The woman sat down in the armchair, arranged her hair with her hands and said to the boy: "Today YOU WILL NOT GO ("YOU HAVE NOT TO GO") to school. WE SHALL STUDY together.'

The second and third person forms of the simple future are sometimes used with an imperative meaning, to give an order, a request or instructions, sometimes more categorically than the imperative mood itself (compare English Close the door. with You will close the door!):

Këmbës t'i biesh tashiti, atë DO TË MARRËSH se ai qe kismet i yt. 'Do what you will, ("however you may strike your foot now"), that is who YOU WILL marry ("TAKE"), because that is ("was") your fate.'

Nejse, edhe sikur të mos kthehet Guri, ti DO TË SHKOSI vetë në Korçë, Demkë! -- in drejtua mësuesi Demkës. "No matter, even if Guri does not return, you WILL GO to Korçë yourself, Demkë!" the teacher said ("directed himself") to Demkë.'

The future subjunctive of the verbs jam and kam, mostly in the second and third person forms, is sometimes used with the evident sense of "turn out to..." rather than of a future "will":

Apo mos kushedi ka zemër të mirë? E ç'zemër DO TË KETË ai, moj e mjerë! 'Or is he after all somehow good hearted ("have a good heart")? And how can he be good hearted ("what heart DOES HE TURN OUT TO HAVE"), you poor girl!'

Memoja dhe Xhemali shikuan njëri-tjëtrin. Ky DO TË JETË Rrapoja menduan dhe e lanë trungun e lisit. 'Memo and Xhemal looked at each other. 'This must ("WILL") BE Rrapo," they thought and they left the trunk of the oak tree.'

-- Kushedi se Ç'DO TË KESH, se dhëmbi pas heqjes s'dhej të të dhimbe -- tha Rrapoja. "Who knows what's bothering you ("WHAT YOU TURN OUT TO HAVE"), because after extraction, the tooth ought not to have hurt you," said Rrapo.'

C.1 Subjunctive Future Perfect Uses

Forms constructed of the future subjunctive of kam (jam for passives) + participle, of the type do të kem punuar 'I will have worked', are used only rarely in Albanian to indicate an action which is to be completed before some future point of time:

-- Ata do të pendohen për këtu sherr të madh, që nisën me ne, por atërherë do të jetë vonë -- tha kronikani. -- Shumë giak DO TË JETË DERDHUR. "They will regret this great quarrel they began with us, but then it will be [too] late," said the chronicler. "Much blood WILL HAVE BEEN SHED."

-- Këtu -- kryeveqillaqhoxh, tregoi me dorë tokën -- ata do të shikojnë gjurmët e kampit tonë, që shirit e dimrit DO TI KENË PRISHUR e MBULUAR me baltë, por që nuk DO TI KENË ZHDUKUR dot krejtësisht. "Here," the chief advocate pointed to the land with his hand, "they will see the traces of our camp, which the winter rains WILL HAVE DAMAGED and COVERED with mud, but which WILL by no means HAVE ERASED entirely."

Nuk la kam thënë Halilit se sa më është dhimbërisht Shkëmbi i Pishkasht, Tryeza e

2.3.3 C.1 Subjunctive Future Perfect Uses
Skënderbeut, që ai nisi të hidhtë në erë sot e dy vjet dhe që, për pak kohë, do të jete një rrënojë, prej së cilës DO TË KENË NXJERRË mjëra toneleta mineral të kuq. ‘I have not told (it to) Halil how hurt I felt about the Rock of Fiskash, the Table of Skënderbeu, which he began to blow up two years ago, and which in a little while will be a ruin, from which they WILL HAVE EXTRACTED thousands of tons of red ore.’

The future perfect is more often used to express the probability that an action is already completed by the time of the moment of reference. In this usage it is like the perfect subjunctive preceded by a verb with the modal value of ‘could’ or ‘might’:

A DO TË KENË IKUR ato dallandyshet prej çerdhes në balkonin e shtëpisë sonë? ‘I wonder if (“WILL”) those swallows HAVE LEFT the nest on the balcony of our house?’
-- Ku ta dish, mbashe edhe kanë ikur. “Who knows, perhaps they have left.”
-- Me siguri -- MENDOI Mënoja -- DO TA KETË MARRË vesh mendimin tonë për Spiron. “For sure,” THOUGHT Memo, he WILL HAVE heard (“TAKEN ear”) about what we think of Spiro.”

Edhe sfalët e rënda, që thashë unë për të sejurarin e saj, DO TA KENË DËSHPËRUAJ. ‘The hard words, too, that I spoke about her fiance probably (“WILL”) HAVE DISTRESSED HER.’

C.2 Subjunctive Future Past Perfect Uses

A future past perfect tense constructed of do + past perfect subjunctive, of the type do të kisha larë, is rarely used to express a future action to be completed before a particular moment in the past. However, like the future perfect, it is used to express the probability that an action has already been completed by the time of the reference moment, in the case of this tense, a moment in the past:

Ata e kishin parë tek ikte kaluar me t’emën prapa dhe e morën me mend se këtij njeriu dëç DO T’I KISHTA NGJARË. ‘They had seen him as he went riding with his mother in the rear, and they understood (“took with mind”) that something MUST HAVE HAPPENED to this man.’

Vëshë trashë dhe kaq keq i rrinë rrrobat në trup, sa menjëherë formoje bindje se këto rroba dikush DO T’la KISH FALUR. ‘He wore heavy clothes, and the garments so ill suited him that at once you became convinced that someone MUST HAVE DONATED these clothes to him.’

C.3 Future Imperfect Tense Uses

The basic use of the future imperfect, constructed of do + imperfect subjunctive, is to indicate an action which is to be operative after a reference moment in the past. When a past moment is established as the point of reference, as may happen in consequent clauses of conditional sentences whose antecedent clause is in a past tense, in relative clauses embedded in sentences with past tense main verbs, and in indirect discourse after a verb of saying or thinking (e.g., them ‘I say’, mendoj ‘I think’, kujtoj ‘I recall’, pandeh ‘I suppose’, shpresoj ‘I hope’) in the past definite or imperfect, a future imperfect form may be used to express the future in respect to the past:

Nga ana tjetër, shpresoi se glithë kujdesi i tepruar, që tregonte nëna për vëllanë e madh, tani DO TË BINTE mbi këtë. ‘On the other hand, she hoped that all the excessive care that her mother had shown for her older brother WOULD now FALL upon her.’

Dhe, sa herë që mundohet të përfyrtonte atë "burrin", me të cilin pas disa muajve DO TË MARTOHEJ, përpara syve të mendjes, atje pranë ti, i dite edhe Raifi. ‘And, whenever she tried to envisage that "husband" to whom she WOULD BE MARRIED after a few months, in her mind’s eye, close to him, there appeared Raifi as well.’
2.3.4 Optative Mood Uses

Modality of desire is expressed by the optative mood verb forms as a wish, blessing, or curse:

-- Isha gati për të qarë dhe po qesh si budalla. Hë, MOS VDEKSH kurrë, o xha Spiro, dhe ti, o djalë, U BËFSH ç'të them, u mendua i sëmuri. ‘I was ready to cry and here I am laughing like crazy. Hey, MAY YOU never DIE, uncle Spiro, and you, son, MAY YOU BECOME, what shall I say, considered the sick man.’

-- Vezir, -- qeshi një tjetër. -- Jo, jo, -- vazhdoi i sëmuri dhe aty për aty shtoi: -- U BËFSH njeri i madh, të NDEROFSHIN të gjithë! ‘Vizier,” another joked. “No, no,” continued the sick man and right away added, “MAY YOU BECOME a great man, MAY everyone HONOR you.”

“Aj, mrgljinjë, të ÇAFTE ujku të ÇAFTE!” “Oh, dun cow, MAY the wolf CHOP you UP, CHOP you UP.”

Note in the last example how the optative verb is repeated for emphasis. The intonation on the repetition is at a low, unchanging pitch, like an "under the breath" afterthought.

The optative mood has two tenses: present and perfect.

In clauses with negative meaning the prolocic particle of negation mos is used rather than s’ or nuq, before the optative.

A. Present Tense Optative Uses

The basic use of the present tense of the optative mood is to express the speaker's wish in respect to an action at the moment of speaking or after it:

-- Dhe ti, o bir, QOFSH i gëzuar e të RROFSHIN djemtë e u HËNGÅRSH ësHQe, që na bëre të kujtojmë ato kohë të qëmocme, -- tha plaku e mbushë kupat. ‘‘And you, son, MAY YOU be truthful and MAY your boys LIVE (LONG) and MAY YOU CELEBRATE (‘EAT’) their wedding, (you) who made us recall those old times" the old man said and filled up the glasses.

Që stanar Istrefi. Stanar i ËNÇIN, se njëzet krerë s’i kishet ne tufë. ‘It was the livestock breeder, Istref. Livestock breeder so-called (‘MAY THEY SAY to him’), because he didn’t have twenty heads in his herd.’

Ju KËNDOFTPË zemra, o bijtë e ml! -- urol xha Mitë që nga fundi i zemrës. ‘MAY your heart SING, o my sons!” wished uncle Mitë from the bottom of his heart.’

However, the present optative may also be used to express a possible future action, without particularly expressing the speaker's wish for that action, when it appears after në ‘if’, or edhe në ‘even if’ in the antecedent clause of a hypothetical sentence. In such a usage, it is synonymous with the present subjunctive preceded by the subordinating conjunctions po ‘if’ and edhe po ‘even if’ respectively:

Atëherë EDHE NË I PUSHTOFSHIM ne, nuk keml për t’i nënshtruar dot më. ‘Then, EVEN IF we OCCUPY THEM, we shall not be able to subdue them any more.’

EDHE NË RËNÇA, do të arrij të mbështetem pas mërit. ‘EVEN IF I FALL, I will manage to support myself against the wall.’

The third person (and occasionally the second person as well) of the verb jam in the present optative is also used synonymously with the present subjunctive after the relative con-
junctions kushdo ‘whoever’, and cilddo ‘whichever, whoever,’ and the adverbial conjunctions kudo ‘wherever’ and kurdo ‘whenever’:

Njeriu, që e mban në duar atë fletë, CILIDO QOFTE, veç armikut, e ndjen menjëherë veten pjesëtar të kësaj lufte. ‘The man who holds that card in his hand, WHOEVER HE MAY BE, except the enemy, feels himself at once to be a participant in this struggle.’
Folmë, thuam, CILIDO QOFTE. ‘Speak to me, tell me, WHOEVER IT MAY BE.’

B. Perfect Tense Optative Uses

The perfect tense of the optative, unlike the present tense, has a much more restricted usage in its basic meaning, since only in very special cases can it express the wish of the speaker for an already completed action:

E mej Parti, të QOFSHA FALË për këto gëzime që na jep! ‘Oh Party, be thanked (“MAY I HAVE THANKED”) for these joys that you give us!’

In antecedent clauses of hypothetical sentences the perfect optative is also used very occasionally after the conjunction në:

-- NË PACIM PUNUAR edhe ne kështu për ngritjen e kooperativës, vaj halli. ‘If we too HAD WORKED like this in the setting up of the cooperative, forget it!’
-- Ai sot të ndjek e, po të rrethol, të vret, si na vrau ca ditë më parë ndër shokun tonë në Tirånë, Qemal Stafa, NË E PAC DËGJUAR. ‘Today he pursues you and, if he surrounds you, he kills you, as he killed a few days ago a comrade of ours in Tirânë, Qemal Stafa, IF YOU HAVE HEARD OF HIM.’

Instead of the perfect optative in antecedent clauses the perfect subjunctive preceded by the conditional subordinating conjunction po is more often used.

We occasionally find the perfect optative used in the WHAT IF exclamatory or interrogative clauses: po në më PASTË PRITUR e pastaj të jetë larguar?! ‘But (what) if he HAD WAITED for me and then had left?!’

2.3.5 Imperative Mood Uses

As indicated in Section 2.1.4, modality of desire in the form of a command, a demand, advice, a request, an appeal, an invitation, permission, etc., is expressed by the imperative mood. To form the negative, the particle mes ‘don’t’ is placed before the imperative form:

-- LINI pushkët, LINI pushkët e MOS GJUANI më, o gjahtarë -- urdhëron Mark Shalëgjati, i pari i gjahut. ‘LEAVE the guns, LEAVE the guns and DON’T HUNT any more, o hunters, orders Mark Shalëgjati, the leading man of the hunt.’
-- DËGJAVE ti, o Miloš, o bir? ZGJIDH të njëqind kalorësit më të mirë dhe kalorësit e mi dhe NISU. ‘Did you hear, o Miloš, o son? CHOOSE the best one hundred riders and my riders and DEPART.’

This mood has person forms only for the second person singular and plural. If the speaker, through the participants in the conversation, wishes to order one or several persons who are not taking part in the conversation, he uses the third person forms of the present subjunctive in the singular or plural, preceded or not by the particle le ‘let, leave’ (see Section 2.3.7 B.2 on Jussives), with the sense of an imperative. The first person plural of the present subjunctive is also used with an imperative sense when the speaker wishes to motivate a group of persons toward an action in which he will also take part (like English ‘let’s go’). The future subjunctive is also sometimes used with imperative force (see Section 2.3.3 C).

The basic meaning of the imperative is to express the desire of the speaker with nuances of a) ordering, b) inviting, c) advising, d) imploring, e) approving the performance of action at the moment of speaking or after it:
Chapter 2

Verbs and Verbal Phrases

a) ordering:
"MOS U AFRONI te gropai!" "LARGOHUNI nga gardhi!" -- dha urdhër komandanti i njësitit. "DON'T GET NEAR the hole!" "GET AWAY from the fence!" ordered the commander of the detachment.'

b) inciting or inviting:
-- Atëherë ZGJIDHE vetë, hajt, BÈHU burrë! 'Then RESOLVE IT yourself, come on, be ('BECOME') a man!'
-- TË betohem se s' do t'i them kurrkuj, vec BÈJI shpejt. 'I swear to you that I won't tell anyone, just DO THEM quickly.'

c) advising or requesting:
-- QETÈSOHU, -- i pëshpërëti infermierja -- MUNDOHU të flesh. "RELAX" the nurse whispered to him, "TRY to sleep."

-- DÈGJOMÈ e mos m'U ZËMËRO, një fjalë do tê tê them: Mos U DORËZO, mos e LËSHO veten; e di që je pa këmbë, po mos U DORËZO. Po u dorëzove, humbe fare. "LISTEN TO ME and do not BE ANGRY with me. I have but one bit of advice for you: don't SURRENDER, don't let go ("RELEASE the self"); I know that you lost your legs, but don't SURRENDER. If you surrender, you're totally lost."

d) imploring:
-- MÈ THUAJ tê drejtën ç'sëmundje kishin minjë, që lëshuam ne gjatë sulmit? -- pyeti me zë lutës jeniceri. "TELL me the truth, what disease did the mice that we released during the offensive have?" asked the Jannissary in a pleading voice."

-- Uh, aman, LERINI këto muhabete -- tha biondja. "Oh, please, stop ("LEAVE THEM") these conversations," said the blonde.

e) approving, allowing:
-- THUAJE tê shkrejtën, -- ndërhyri DINI, -- mos tê tê vijë zor, THUAJE troç, sic të ka bije; THUAJE se jam një copë sakat, që kërkon tê barazohet me njërëzit normalë. "(You may) SAY the worst," intervened Dini, "don't be squeamish, SAY IT bluntly, as it behooves you; SAY that I am just a cripple, who is trying to be the equal of normal people."

To indicate with special expressive force one or more actions repeated in the past, the second person singular of the imperative may be used with subjects in all three persons, singular or plural, whether expressed or unexpressed in the sentence. In such cases, the imperative of a single verb is repeated, or the imperative forms of two or more different verbs may be used, accompanied by their respective subjects or not, and connected either asyndetically or by the coordinating conjunction e 'and':

Gjarmani HIDH në zjarë një jastëk, xha Mekja HIDH dy. 'The German threw ("THROW!") one pillow into the fire, uncle Meko threw ("THROW!") two.'
Përpata rendte xaxhaj me 'austriaku' në dorë e pas vinim ne. HIDHU e bot nëpër driza e ferra, RRÈSHQIT në hendeqë, bjer në pellgje me uël! 'Ahead ran our uncle with the gun ("the Austrian") in his hand, while we followed. We jumped ("THROW YOURSELF!") like crazy over brush and bramble, slid ("SLIP!") into ditches, fell ("FALL!") into pools of water.'

E tê na u bënë, or tê keçën, këmbët gjak! Dhe QAJ e IK, dhe QAJ e REND, dhe QAJ e KLITH, nënëza e vratë arritit majë çukës më të kënëjënë të maleve të Zavalinës, e thirrë e thirrë tri herë. 'And our feet, mind you, became bloodied! Thus, weeping ("WEEP!") and walking ("GO!") and weeping and running ("RUN!"), and weeping and screaming ("SCREAM!"), the wounded mother reached the nearest peak of the Zavalinë mountains, and shouted three times.'
2.3.6 Uses of the Participle

The participle is a non-finite verb form with semantic and grammatical qualities that are both verbal and adjectival. In Albanian, the participle is an invariable verb form, which can be turned into an adjective by preposing an adjectival article (see Section 4.7.1-A). When used in a predicative function a participle is similar in meaning to an adjective derived from it.

Compare the predicative

Dritaren e gjeta HAPUR. ‘I found the window OPENED.’

with the adjectival

Dritaren e gjeta TË HAPUR. ‘I found the window OPEN.’

When used in this predicative function, the participle indicates that the designated action is completed or finished.

The participle as such in Albanian does not reflect differences in voice, aspect, mood, person or number. However, when they appear as independent constituents, the participles of transitive verbs have a passive perfect sense.

O flamur gjak, o flamur shkhâbë / O vend e vafër, o nën e babë, / LAGUR me lot, DJEGUR me flakë, / Flamur i kug, flamur i zi. ‘Oh blood flag, o eagle flag / oh country and hearth, oh mother and father, / MOISTENED with tears, BURNED with flame / red flag, black flag.’

The fact that articulated adjectives formed from the stems and participles of these verbs generally have a passive meaning also gives support to the hypothesis that participles of transitive verbs have a basically passive sense: i vrrrë ‘slain’, i shkruar ‘written’, i zbukuruar ‘beautified’, i përktëhyer ‘translated’, i hapur ‘open(ed)’, i përhapur ‘spread out’, etc. On the other hand, participles of intransitive verbs always have an active sense: i shëditur ‘strolling’. A few adjectives formed from participles of transitive verbs may have either an active sense or a passive one, depending on the context: njeri i ditur ‘a learned man’, fakti i ditur ‘the known fact’.

The participle in Albanian has limited use as a constituent in itself; more often, it serves as a component part of complex verbal forms. It is used, for example, in the formation of the compound tenses of the past (see Sections 2.2.3 A.2 c, d, and e), the present and imperfect of the admistrative (see Sections 2.2.3 B.1 and B.2), and the present tense of the optative of some verbs (see Section 2.2.3 D).

It is also a constituent of non-finite constructions of the type pa punuar ‘without working’, duke punuar ‘working, while working’ (and me punue ‘to work’ in the Gheg dialect) (see Section 2.2.5 B.1c).

As an independent constituent the participle serves: a) as a predicate complement of the object; b) in absolute constructions as an independent nominal qualifier; c) as the complement of the modals do and duhet; d) as a predicate of a copular clause:

a) Nusja e Leksit e mbajti një copë herë NGRITUR, përgjysmë, për t’ia lehtësuar nxjerrjen e vrrrit. ‘Leksi’s wife held him up (“RAISED”) for a while, bent double, in order to facilitate the expulsion of the bile.’

b) Qetë e shpiragajve, MËSUAR në rrugë fusheve dhe me ngarkesë afise same, kalinjshë e lëpushkash, po kallonin djersë. ‘The oxen of the Shpiragaj, HABITUATED to public roads and to loads of hay, grain stalks and mullein, were drenched in sweat.’

ARRATISUR, SYRGJNIOSUR / RASKAPIITUR E KATOSUR / Brohorit me besë e shpresë / Anës Elbës, anës Spreë-së. ‘EXILED, CONFINED / FATIGUED and KNOCKED DOWN / I shout with faith and hope / along the Elbe, along the Spree [rivers].’

Xhaketên — ç’ka, nuk e kishtë të keqe, një kadile kombinati BLERË e QEPUR disa muaj më parë, po pantallona zezaat s’mbaheshin më! ‘The jacket—so-so, it wasn’t bad, a factory velvet, BOUGHT and SEWN several months earlier, but the miserable pants were not worth wearing any more!’
NOTE

In functions a) and b) the corresponding adjective with a preposed article is more common:

Hallati, I TREMBUR nga gjithë ato ngjyrat, që i farfurinë befas para syve, ungrit kas dhe shifrofti me të kër. ‘FRIGHTENED by all those colors that radiated suddenly before his eyes, Hallat reared up and snorted threateningly.’

TË TMERRUAR nga trimëria juaj dhe nga shkatërrimi i garnizonit të Krujës, ndofta do të na e lëshojnë fortësën me të mirë. ‘TERRIFIED by your valor and by the destruction of the Krujë garrison, they may surrender the fortress peacefully.’

c) Po unë sillesha në atë mënyrë, se ashtu e donte shpëtimi juaj edhe imi, se puna ishte e atillë që DUHEJ BËRË e jo THËNË. ‘But I behaved in that fashion, because your salvation and mine called for it, because the job was such that IT HAD TO BE DONE and not talked about ("SAID").’

DUHEN BËRË vijat kulluese pa mbjellë, shoqja brigadiere. ‘The drainage troughs MUST BE prepared ("MADE") before planting, comrade brigadier.’

Ara DO KORRUR, gruri DO SHIRË, lopa DO MJELË, hyjvanët DUHEN GRAZHDUAR. ‘The field NEEDS REAPING, the wheat NEEDS THRESHING, the cow NEEDS MILKING, the livestock NEED feeding ("STABLING").’

d) ‘ZGJURAR qenka’, i tha vetë dhe e vëshroi përsëri. ‘She has finally AWAKENED,’ he said to himself, and he looked at her again.’

Participles of transitive verbs used as predicates of copular sentences indicate a temporary state or condition of the subject; they may be replaced by the corresponding adjectives with preposed article:

MBYLLUR (= E MBYLLUR) është dera, apo HAPUR? ‘Is the door CLOSED or OPEN(ED)?’

NOTES

1. The participle may also be used predicatively in absolute constructions with the value of temporal dependent clauses: ARDHUR në kohën kur Vita po zhvaste rrobën nga supet, ato iu sulën përsipër. ‘HAVING ARRIVED at the time when Vita was stripping the garment off her shoulders, they threw themselves at her.’

2. The participle shkuar ‘gone’ followed by a noun in the dative case is used to repeat in a reinforcing way the predicate nominative or predicate complement: Ky është turp e SHKUAR turpit. ‘This is disgrace beyond disgrace ("disgrace and PAST disgrace").’

A. Uses of Participial Constructions

As discussed in Section 2.2.5, PRIVATIVE constructions of the type pa laër ‘without washing’ and GERUNDIVE constructions of the type duke laër ‘while, by washing, washing’ are composed of the participle preceded by pa or duke.

The observations that follow apply also to the infinitive form of the type me la ‘washing’ of the Gheg dialect, for which see the remarks in Section 2.2.5 B.1c.

These non-finite forms are semantically and grammatically different from the bare participle. Active forms of transitive verbs in these non-finite constructions generally have an active sense, but the bare participle has a passive sense. Transitive verbs used in these non-finite forms may thus take direct objects as well as indirect ones:

2.3.6 A. Uses of Participial Constructions
Ndofta ju shkoi nê mendje që e kisha harruar edhe atdheun, edhe nderin, edhe lirinë, kur ju ktheja prapë tê helmuar PA JU DHËNË ASNJÊ SHPRESE dhe PA JU TREGUAR ASNJÊ NDJENJÊ fshnikë dhe shpirmadhe. ‘Perhaps you thought that I had forgotten the fatherland, and honor, and liberty, when I turned you back deserted WITHOUT GIVING YOU ANY HOPE—and WITHOUT SHOWING YOU A SINGLE noble and magnanimous SENTIMENT.’

S'kam lënë vend PA TÊ KËRKUAR. ‘I have searched for you everywhere (‘I have not left place WITHOUT SEEKING YOU’).’

Pse? C'i ke bërë ti atij që të ka nê dorë? -- pyeti gruaja DUKE MOS IA HEQUR dorën e djathë nga qafa, kurse me dorën tjetër fshinte faqet e lagura. “‘Why? What have you done to him that he has you in his control?” asked his wife WITHOUT TAKING OFF her right hand from his neck, while with her other hand she wiped off his wet cheeks.’

Active forms of intransitive verbs in these non-finite forms may take indirect objects.

-- Xha Llazarë? -- i tha Stavri, DUKE I DALË përpara dhe DUKE VËSHTRUAR i qeshur e i gëzuar fytërën vrarëllje tê mësuesit. “Uncle Llazar?” Stavri said to him, going over to him (‘WHILE EMERGING forward TO HIM’) and LOOKING at the pock-marked face of the teacher, smiling and joyous.

The non-finite constructions under examination here are also distinguished from participles by other grammatical qualities. Whereas the bare participle is grammatically invariable, gerundive and privative constructions do reflect voice distinctions: for transitive verbs these constructions have both an active form and a passive form, the latter constructed with the reflexive particle u between the particle pa or duke and the participle:

Përparojmë nê këtë mënrye PA U DIKTUAR dhe, kur afrohem 200 m, hapim zjarr mbi ta. ‘We advance in this manner WITHOUT BEING DETECTED, and when we approach within 200 m., we open fire on them.’

Por Selami, PA U VIZITUAR ende nga mjekët e spitalit, pati ndihmën e komunistëve të spitalit. ‘But WITHOUT BEING VISITED yet by the doctors of the hospital, Selami received help from the communists in the hospital.’

Ecte me hap të gjatë, DUKE U PENGUAR nëpër plisa. ‘He walked in long strides, stumbling (‘WHILE BEING HINDERED’) in the turf.’

In contrast to the participle, gerundives and privatives may have a subject that is different from the subject of the controlling clause:

Kuajt, sikur ta dinin sa nxitohej i zoti të mbaronte lëmin PA RËNË muzgu, ia nisën, përsëri, zdrënkatël. ‘The horses, as if they knew how their owner was hurrying to finish the threshing before dusk (‘WITHOUT dusk FALLING’), began again at a gallop.’

Agimin e gjetën te Çezma DUKE PIRË ujë. ‘They found Agim at the Fountain, DRINKING water.’

A.1 Uses of Privatives

Privative constructions express the negative of gerundive constructions. They indicate a condition in which the action designated by the verb is absent. The temporal reference of the privative is tied to the temporal reference of the verb in the controlling clause: in general it expresses the absence of an action at the time of the action named by the controlling verb:

PA LUAJTUAR këmbët, nuk luajnë dhëmbët. ‘WITHOUT MOVING the feet, the teeth do not move (i.e., he who does not work, does not eat).’

Erdhi PA E FTUAR kush. ‘He came WITHOUT BEING INVITED by anybody.’

Mos ik PA na LAJMËRUA. ‘Don’t go WITHOUT NOTIFYING us.’

U nis PA ZBARDHUR dita. ‘He left before dawn (‘WITHOUT the day WHITENING’).’
NOTE

On rare occasions in the written language one also encounters a compounded PERFECT PRIVATIVE construction of the type pa pasë lařë ‘without having washed’:
Nga sa kam para syve materialin, po PA PASË KRYER ndosjë kërkim të veçantë, mua-më del-se... ‘Judging from the material before my eyes, but WITHOUT HAVING COMPLETED any special inquiry, it appears to me that...’

Privative constructions are chiefly used:

1. With a predicative function, after such verbs as jam ‘I am’, kam ‘I have’, mbetem ‘I remain, I am left’, rri ‘I sit, stay’, lë ‘I let’:
Një herë u tërboq, por hodhi në sulm rezervat, që ISHIN akoma PA REGJISTRUAR dhe përsërë fitoi. ‘Once he withdrew, but threw into the attack the reserves that WERE still UNREGISTERED and again he won.’
Lu kujtua Qemal Orhanaj, me të cilin ajo KISHTE muaj PA U PARË dhe kishte hequr çdo shpresë që të shihej më. ‘She recalled Qemal Orhanaj, whom she had not seen for months (‘with whom she HAD months WITHOUT BEING SEEN’) and had given up any hope of ever seeing again.’
Një copë herë Hajdar beu MBETI si dru më këmbë, PA NXJERRË asnjë fjalë nga goja dhe PA LËVIZUR fare nga vendi. ‘For a while Hajdar Bey stood standing (‘REMAINED on the feet’) like a tree, WITHOUT saying a word (‘TAKING OUT any word from the mouth’) and WITHOUT MOVING at all from the spot.’
Përveç kësaj KISHTE NDENJUR disa ditë PA DALË në diell dhe as në rërë. ‘Besides this, HE HAD REMAINED several days WITHOUT GOING OUT in the sun nor even on the sand.’
QENDRUAN një copë herë PA FOLUR duke i deqjuar njëri-tjetrit të rrahurat e zemrës. ‘THEY REMAINED a while WITHOUT SPEAKING, listening to each other’s heartbeats.’
Dua s’dua, DO TË LË kështu PA THËNË shumë gjëra, të cilat, ndonjëse jashtë temës, kanë edhe ato rëndësinë e tyre. ‘Like it or not, I WILL thus LEAVE many things UNSAID, which, although not appropriate to the subject, have their own particular importance.’

2. With a temporal function.
When used in this function, the temporal subordinating conjunction sa ‘(even) as much (as)’ or the particle që ‘(even) before’, may appear before it:
PA MBARUAR mirë këto fjalë, një zë nga mesi i turmës bërtet. ‘These words hardly finished (‘WITHOUT FINISHING well’), a voice from the midst of the crowd roars.’
PO, PA ARRITUR te selia, pa tek vinte drejt tij Jorgji Borë, të ndjekur nga një çun dhjetëvjeçar. ‘But before (‘WITHOUT’) ARRIVING at headquarters, he saw coming toward him Jorgji Bora, followed by a ten-year-old kid.’
Po kjo duket si një anakronizëm, se më 1444 Skënderbeu nuk ishte mjaft i fortë sa të përvishaq për një ekspeditë jashtë Shqipërisë, SA PA MBUSHUR motin, qëkur zapti Krujën dhe ngiriti krye kundër Sulltanit. ‘But this seems like an anachronism, because in 1444 Skënderbeu was not strong enough to mount an expedition outside Albania, not even (‘AS MUCH AS WITHOUT FILLING’) a year after he captured Krujë and rebelled against the Sultan.’
QË PA DALË nga makina, kruushk Vasili hodhi një sy rrith e rrottull për të kërkuar migtë. ‘EVEN BEFORE GETTING OUT of the car, cousin Vasili cast his eyes about in search of his friends.’

3. As a circumstantial adverbial:
Po pashai i Gjirokastërës, me të dëguar këtë lajm, mblodhi një ushtri të madhe dhe hyri me tradhë në qytet, kur garrizoni dhe ndënjësit po flinën të qetë, dhe e zaptol kështjellën pothuaj PA DERDHUR gjak. ‘But as soon as he heard this news, the Pasha of Gjirokastër assembled a great army and entered the city by treachery, when the garrison and the inhabitants were sleeping peacefully, and captured the fortress almost WITHOUT SHEDDING blood.’

4. With a conditional function:

Realizimi i boshit ideologjik marksist-leninist në gjithë punën e shkolës nuk mund të arrihet, PA ZBATUAR parimin e njohur marksist-leninist të lidiqes së mësimit me punën prodhuese, PA e ZBATUAR jo me fjalë dhe në mënry dhe akademike, por konkretisht, edhe në mënry praktike. ‘The realization of the ideological Marxist-Leninist axis in the entire work of the school, cannot be attained WITHOUT IMPLEMENTING the well-known Marxist-Leninist principle of the link between learning and productive labor, WITHOUT IMPLEMENTING it not with words and in an academic manner, but concretely and in a practical manner.’

PA LUATUR këmbët, nuk luajnë dhëmbët. ‘Unless the feet move ("WITHOUT MOVING the feet"), the teeth won’t move.’ (i.e., if you don’t work, you don’t eat)

PA NGRËNË hudhra, s’ëve vjen erë goja. ‘If you don’t eat ("WITHOUT EATING") garlic, your mouth won’t smell.’

NOTES

1. In constructions with conditional or adverbial functions, the non-finite negative form is synonymous with the negative gerundive: duke mos larë ‘by not washing’.

2. In constructions with a predicative function, the privative construction is similar in meaning to the corresponding derived adjective with the prefix pa-, the difference residing in whether the characteristic is considered to be a regular characteristic (adjective) or a temporary condition (privative):

a) Ku e lamë e ku na mbeti / Vaj-vatani e mjer-mileti / Anës detit I PALARË / Anës dritës I PAPARË / Pranë sofrës I PANGRENË / Pranë dikes I PANXENË! ‘How we left it and how it stagnated / Sad country and wretched folk / By the sea[and yet] UNWASHED / By the light [and yet] UNSEEN / Near the dining table [and yet] UNFED / Near learning [and yet] UNUTORED!’

b) PA NGRÈNË e PA PIRÊ / S’mbetem, moj Mîrë. ‘WITHOUT EATING and WITHOUT DRINKING / We won’t remain, oh Mîrë.’

-- Ç’mbë do? -- iu përgjigj Tana e u ngrit duke lënë PA PASTRUAJR një panxhar, që kishte në dorë. ‘What do you want?’ Tana replied to him, and she got up, leaving UNCLEANED a beet she had in her hand.’

A.2 Uses of Gerundives

Verbs in this non-finite form express an action that accompanies the action in the controlling clause, usually occurring at the same time. The temporal reference of the gerundive is thus determined by the tense of the controlling clause. Since the action expressed by it is usually realized at the same time as that of the controlling clause, the gerundive, according to context, may refer to the present, past, or future events:

NJË zë, që iu duk tepër i njohur, PO PYESTE DUKE U AFRAUAR. ‘A voice that seemed very familiar to him, WAS QUESTIONING WHILE COMING NEARER.’

Po vjen një ditë që pjeshka, e pjekur dhe e mbushur plot me lëng, del nga fletët e pemës ku qëndron fshehuë e, DUKE ZBULUAR gjithë bukurinë e saj, DUKEK sikuri i thotë udhëtarit, që kalen aty pranë: këputmë e futmë në gji! ‘But a day comes when the peach, ripe and juicy, pops out of the leaves of the tree where it remains hidden, and, UNCOVERING all of its beauty, SEEMS to be saying to the traveler who passes by: Pick me off and put me in your bosom!’
Kur të arrinë ju atje do t’i gjeni vullnetarët DUKE PUNUAR. ‘When you arrive there, you will find the volunteers WORKING.’

NOTE
In written Albanian, a compounded PERFECT GERUNDIVE construction of the type duke pasé larë (see Section 2.2.3 B.1b) is occasionally encountered:

Marrëdhëniet midis qytetit dhe fsihatit në vendin tonë janë ndërtuar në baza socialistë, në bazë të shkëmbimit të prodhimeve bulqësore dhe industriale, DUKE PASË LIKUIDUAR me kohë sistemën e dorëzimit të detyrueshëm nga ana e fshtarësisë të të gjithë tepricula shtetit dhe DUKE E PASË ZËVENDÉSUAR atë me sistemën e shitjes së lirë të tepricula. ‘Relations between the city and the village in our country are built on socialist bases, on the basis of the exchange of agricultural and industrial products, HAVING LIQUIDATED long ago the system of obligatory deliveries by the peasantry of all surplus to the state, and HAVING REPLACED that with the system of the free sale of surpluses.’

As indicated in Section 2.3.7, the gerundive is also used in progressive constructions with the auxiliary jam in the present or imperfect indicative.

In addition to this function, the gerundive is used in constructions:

1. with the function of a manner adverbial:

Njeriu po afrohej DUKE ECUR në mënyrë të çuditshme. ‘The man was approaching BY WALKING in a strange manner.’

O nëna të shërbenja, që jeni gëdhirë pa gjumë kushedi sa herë DUKE NDENJUR mbi shtratin tonë e DUKE na LEDHATUAR me duart punëtorë, të fshikura e plot damare, fashë, ballin, fletë! ‘Oh dear mothers, who have spent who knows how many sleepless nights STAYING by our bed and CARESSING with your working hands, shriveled and full of veins, our cheeks, forehead, hair.’

2. with the function of a temporal adverb:

Ai e dinte se mbashtë, DUKE DËGUIAR fjallimin e tij, qindra mijëra njerëz do të pyetnin veten: do të ketë vallë blookadë? ‘He knew that in the afternoon, hundreds of thousands of people, LISTENING to his speech, would ask themselves: will there be a blockade?’

DUKE KALUAR përparë Mapos, i ra ndërmend të blinte një suvenir. ‘PASSING by the Mapo, it occurred to her to buy a souvenir.’

3. with the function of a causative adverbial:

Gjermanët janë nisur që nga Dibër e Martaneshi, DUKE PANDEHUR se ne do të qëndrojmë atje. ‘The Germans have set out all the way from Dibër and Martanesh, IMAGINING that we would remain there.’

DUKE PASUR frikë se mos e dikonte plaku, bëri sikur nuk e vuri re, po në të kthyer të rrugës i bëri shenjtë me dorë. ‘Fearing that the old man might detect him, he pretended not to notice him, but at the turn of the road he signalled him with his hand.’

DUKE mos DITUR c’i bënte, nisi të lexonte përsëri automatikisht. ‘Not KNOWING what to do, he began to read again automatically.’

4. with a conditional function:

DUKE SHTRËNGUAR radhët tonë rreth PARTISË, DUKE FORCUAR vigjilencën, DUKE SHUMËFISHUAR përpjekjet tonë për të realizuar me sukses më mirë se çdo herë tjetër detyrat për realizimin e planit të shtetit në të gjitha fushat, ne do të dallim fajebardhë. ‘BY TIGHTENING our ranks around the Party, STRENGTHENING our vigilance, MULTIPLYING our efforts so as to realize successfully better than any other time the tasks for the fulfillment of the state plan in all areas, we will emerge victorious.’

DUKE U MARTUAR në këtë rast, i cili pa dyshim nuk ishte për dasmë, Shënderbëu do të fuste zgarrin në shtëpinë e vet. ‘BY MARRYING at this time, which undoubtedly
was not suitable for a wedding, Skënderbeu would have ignited a fire in his own house."

5. with a predicative function:

\[ \text{U-mëna që, kur vinte në shëpëri, ta jënte DUKE PUNUAR me futë përparë, ose të ulur në tryezë. 'He got accustomed, when he would go home, to finding her WORKING with apron on, or seated at the table.'} \]

\[ \text{M'u duk sikur pasë në rrugë një tufë kalorësh DUKE IKUR me të katra. 'It seemed to me that I saw a bunch of riders galloping ('GOING on all fours') on the road.'} \]

The gerundive is also used relatively often to express a second action whose meaning is coordinated with that of the verb in the controlling clause:

\[ \text{-- Mbaroi edhe Salih Protopapa -- tha Memoja DUKE KTHYER (= dhe ktheu) krahef. ‘Salih Protopapa is finished’, said Memo, TURNING (= and he turned) his back.'} \]

\[ \text{-- Ti ishe atje -- tha kronikani DUKE ZGJATUR (= dhe zgjati) dorën. ‘You were there’, said the chronicler, HOLDING OUT (=and he held out) his hand.'} \]

\[ \text{Arkitkti ngrinte vazhdimesht dorën, DUKE TREGUAR (=dhe tregonte) një rreth sipër kokës së tij. ‘The architect raised [his] hand continuously, POINTING (=and pointed) to a hoop above his head.'} \]

A.3 Uses of Infinitives

As might be supposed from their form, the non-finite verbal forms of the type për të lare ‘to wash’ and me të lare were historically formed with a deverbal neuter noun. The component parts of these constructions lost their grammatical independence, and the constructions have taken on semantic and grammatical qualities characteristic of the infinitive forms of verbs in other languages.

A.3a. Infinitives with për

The so-called INFINITIVE in contemporary standard Albanian is used frequently but in a restricted number of functions, unlike the Gheg infinitive (e.g., me la ‘to wash’) which is used in a wide range of infinitival functions. Infinitives of the type me la have a dialectal character (they are only used by Gheg speakers) and have not been adopted into the national literary language. The Gheg infinitive is variable in voice (me la ‘to wash’ / me u la ‘to be washed, to wash oneself’) and, more rarely, in tense (me pasë la ‘to have washed’):

\[ \text{Edhe gjashtë vjet, nanë, ti ME PA' PRITÊ (=me pasë pritë) / Un vetë kmishën, nanë, kish hjekë. ‘Even had you waited (TO HAVE WAITED)’ six years, mother / I would have taken off my shirt myself, mother.'} \]

In Gheg, infinitives are also used to form the future indicative or present conditional with the auxiliary kam in the present or imperfect indicative, respectively:

\[ \text{Sot i jav (=javë) na si n’koshim gjalle/KAM ME DALË te Bregu i Gjatë/e me vedi nusen KAM ME E MARRË. ‘A week from today, if we are still alive/I WILL COME OUT to the Breg i Gjatë/and I WILL TAKE the bride with me.’} \]

\[ \text{ME ja PA spatën e ti/,të dyve merak KI'ME NA HI (=kish me na hi). ‘If we had seen (TO SEE)’ his sword, we would both have been seized with fear (to both the fear WOULD HAVE ENTERED’).} \]

In contrast, in contemporary Standard Albanian infinitival forms of the type për të lare are used more narrowly in constructions:

1. As clause adverbials indicating purpose, with the sense "in order to".
Chapter 2  
Verbs and Verbal Phrases

Dhe i gjori fshatar që me mënjes, pa hapur grykën e qesës PËR TË HEDHUR ndonjë lek, detyrohej që ta zgjidhë PËR të PAGUAR tagrambledhësin, se përdryshe e priste burga. ‘And the poor peasant, from morning on, before even opening the neck of his purse—TO-drop ("THROW") a lek [inside], was obliged to-unite-it-IN-ORDER-TO PAY the tax collector, because otherwise jail awaited him.’

Aleks priste me padurim që ta thërриснë në komitetin e partišë PËR T’I DHËNË përgjigjen. ‘Alex waited impatiently to be called to the party committee IN ORDER TO GIVE IT the answer.’

In this function the infinitive form may be preceded either by the particle si ‘as if’ or by the particle sa ‘as much, sufficient’:

Atëherë ngriti sytë, pa koso varia dhe tundë kokën SI PËR TA FALËNDERUAR. ‘Then he lifted his eyes, saw the Kosovar, and nodded his head AS IF TO THANK HIM.’

Fjalët e fundit i tha SA PËR T’I DHËNË zëmër djalit. ‘The final words he uttered ONLY TO GIVE heart to the boy.’

2. With an adjectival function.

Shqipëria ka NJERËZ TË ZOTËT PËR TË QEVERISUR. ‘Albania has PEOPLE CAPABLE of ("FOR") GOVERNING.’

Më ndodhi dëcka e papritur, DICKA PËR TË QESHUR E PËR TË QARË. ‘Something unexpected happened to me, SOMETHING comical and tearful ("FOR LAUGHING AND FOR CRYING").’

DËSHIRA PËR TA TAKUAR i që shtuar më shumë. ‘His DESIRE TO MEET HIM had increased still more.’

In this adjectival function too, infinitive forms may be preceded by the particle si or sa:

Një qëndrim pak SI PËR TË QESHUR mbante zoti Banka. ‘Mr. Banka maintained a somewhat ridiculous ("AS IF TO LAUGH") position.’

I duhet dhënë fund prodhimit SA PËR TË PRODUHAR, me qëllim që të realizohet vëllimi global. ‘An end must be put to producing FOR THE SAKE OF PRODUCING in order to satisfy the overall quota.’

3. With an obligational function

Infinitive forms are used after such verbs as a) jem; b) kam; c) bëhem ‘I become’ to express a modal sense of obligation or expectation. This sense is most pronounced in constructions with jem:

a) -- Dale, bre, dale. C’është kështu me ty? Qan, kur ËSHTË PËR TË QESHUR -- i huqi vërëjën Zefi, duke u ulur në kanapanë pranë dritare, që shikonte nga oborri. ‘Take it easy, I say, take it easy. Why are you behaving like this? You cry, when one should laugh ("IT is TO LAUGH"),’ Zef reprimanded him, as he sat down on the sofa near the window that looked out on the courtyard.

Pastaj i tha: TI JE PËR TË VRARË por nuk të vras. ‘Then he said to him: you ought to be shot, ("YOU ARE TO KILL"), but I won’t shoot you.’

In predicating strings of this type these non-finite forms may be preceded by the particle sa ‘just enough’:

Po mendimi i mjekut ishte që ky ilaç ISHTË SA PËR TË SHTYRË ditët. ‘But the doctor’s opinion was that this medicine EXISTED JUST TO PROLONG life.’

b) Nuk e kupton ai valë se kush KISHTË PËR TË PRERË dru, i ka prere prëj kohësh? -- mendoi Zana me nervozizëm. ‘Doesn’t he understand, perhaps, that whoever was ("HAD") TO CUT wood, did so long ago?’ Zana thought nervously.’

KËM edhe shumë punë PËR TË BËRË. ‘WE HAVE much work TO DO yet.’

c) Atëherë iu kujtua se e bija ISHTË BËRË PËR T’U MARTUAR. ‘Then he remembered that his daughter was old enough to marry ("HAD BECOME FOR GETTING MARRIED").’

TI JE BËRË PËR TË LIDHUAR, Gorë Pisha. ‘YOU are fit to be tied ("HAVE

2.3.6 A.3a. Infinitives with për
4. In emphatic constructions of the type PËR TË NJOHUR, E NJOH ‘AS FOR KNOWING [HIM], I [DO] KNOW [HIM]’, in which the infinitive serves to pull out and accentuate the semantic content of the finite form that follows it:

PËR TË DËGJUAR, KAM DËGJUAR që Piloja ka shitur dele në pazar. ‘AS FOR HEARING (things), I HAVE HEARD that Pilo has sold sheep in the market.’

Kështu e kanë ata: PËR TË MARRË, MARRIN nga ne; PËR TË DHËNË, S'JAPIN. ‘This is how they are: WHEN IT COMES TO TAKING, THEY TAKE from us; WHEN IT COMES TO GIVING, THEY DON'T GIVE.’

5. In constructions with the function of subjects of clauses.

Infinitives are seldom used as subjects in Albanian; when they are, it is usually after the verb mbetet ‘is left, remains’ (in the third person singular only):

I mbetet vetën PËR të RREGULLUAR çatinë e kosheres. ‘It only remained for him TO FIX the roof of the beehive.’

Tani na ka mbetur PËR TË KËRKUAR vetën një ushtar i dites së parë. ‘Now all that remains for us is to SEARCH FOR a soldier of the first day.’

6. As component parts of future and conditional constructions (see Section 2.3.7 B.1).

7. As terms of comparison, accompanied by the comparative conjunctions sesa (or se) ‘than’:

Pa humbrur kohë, Skënderbeu botei një manifest, ku deklaronte shkaqet e luftës, duke theksuar veçanërisht pikën që kjo ishte një luftë për të shpëtuar Shqipërinë nga copëtimi më tepër SESES PËR TË MARRË Danjën. ‘Without losing any time, Skënderbeu published a manifesto, where he declared the causes of war, stressing especially the point that this was more a battle to save Albania from dismemberment THAN TO TAKE Danjë.’

Èshtë më shumë për të qarë SE PËR TË QESHUR. ‘It is more [fitting] to cry THAN TO LAUGH.’

8. Finally, infinitives are used (especially in journalistic style) as objects of certain verbs:

I tha se asnjeri nuk kishte menduar PËR TA SHQETESUAR. ‘He told him that nobody had thought of annoying him (“TO ANNOY HIM”’).

Kjo gjë ndihmon PËR TË SQARUAR më mirë problemën. ‘This thing helps TO CLARIFY the problem better.’

It should be mentioned that it is regularly not used with this function when verbs that express the speaker’s will, such as: dua ‘I want’, dëshiroj ‘I desire’, uroj ‘I greet’, urdhëroj ‘I order, command’, porosit ‘I request’, them ‘I propose, say’, kërkoj ‘I seek’, fut ‘I insert’, etc.; or his stance, such as: preferoj ‘I prefer’, duroj ‘I endure’, lë ‘I let’, leloj ‘I permit’, ndaloj ‘I prohibit’, kundërshtoj ‘I oppose’, dyshoj ‘I doubt’, pres ‘I wait’, etc.; nor is it used after the modal mund. Finite subjunctive verb forms are normally used after these verbs in contemporary Standard Albanian.

A.3b. Participial Absolutes

PARTICIPIAL ABSOLUTES are participles preceded by me të to indicate an action on whose realization the action expressed by the controlling verb is contingent. Such constructions may be marked for passive voice (see Section 2.2.5 A.1b).

The action expressed by participial absolutes may be:

1. An individual action completed in the past or expected to be completed in the future, depending on whether the controlling verb designates a particular action in the past (as it does in a past definite or, more rarely, past perfect tense) or in the future (as it does in the future tense, in a present tense with a future sense, in the imperative mood, or in a present
Chapter 2

Verbs and Verbal Phrases

subjunctive with an imperative sense):

ME TÈ PARÈ Dekon, ai U NDAL, SHTÈMÈNGU me njëren këmbë macën dhe ia
bëri me kokë shokut që të kthej. ‘UPON SEEING Deko, he STOPPED, REMOVED
the cat with one foot and motioned with his head to his comrade to return.’

ME TÈ RËNË muzgu, ISHIN MBLEDHUR tek fiku njërëzit e Koz Dynjaqë e të Pip
Kedhiti. ‘Dusk HAVING FALLEN, the people of Koz Dynja and Pip Kedhi WERE
ASSEMBLED by the fig tree.’

Adili KISHTË ZÈNË të shtruarat, ME T’U KTHYER nga pazarë. ‘Adil had set
himself down on the carpet (‘HAD CAUGHT the laid down ones’), IMMEDIATELY
UPON RETURNING from the market.’

Ja, i themi se, ME T’U MARTUAR unë, DO TA PAJTOJMË, vajzen. ‘Well, we
[can] tell him that AS SOON AS I AM MARRIED WE WILL HIRE the girl.’

Kiu Gremi kishte shkuar në arë tek lëronë e i kishte kërkuar pendëren me fjalën se
DO T’IA KTHENTE, ME TÈ IKUR beu nga fshati. ‘Kiu Grem had gone to the field
where he was plowing, and had asked him to give him the team of oxen with the promise
that he WOULD RETURN IT TO HIM, AS SOON AS the boy LEFT the village.’

Tashti mes vrit mendjen hic, po, ME TÈ MBYLLUR dyqanin, m’i SHKO vrapi në
shtëpi. ‘Now, don’t bother your head, at all, but instead AS SOON AS [you] CLOSE the
store QUICKLY to his house.’

2. An action that has been repeated in the past or that is expected to be repeated in the
future. In this case also, the time sense of the non-finite form is determined by whether the
controlling verb indicates an action that is repeated in the past (when it is in the imperfect
indicative) or is to be repeated in the future (when it appears in a future tense, or less often in
the present indicative or subjunctive with an imperative sense):

Si duket, ai i uruari kumbare, ME TÈ DALË jashtë trollit të gyshes e ME T’I
SHKUAR ëmbëlsira e fiqve, HARRONTE sakaq, tek mendonte djersën, që duhëj të
derdhë për të vënë në vend dëshmorën e tij. ‘Apparently, that blessed godfather, HAV-
ING LEFT his grandmother’s soil and AS SOON AS the sweetness of the figs LEFT
HIM, WOULD immediately FORGET, as he thought of the sweat he would have to
expend in order to attain his desire.’

Si një merimangë e zezë, ME T’U PREKUR një fijëz. ZGJOHET E BËHET GATI të
mbrohet a të sulmojë. ‘Like a black spider, [which] AS SOON AS a thread [of its web] is
TOUCHED, AWAKENS AND GETS READY to defend herself or to attack.’

NOTE

Instead of the non-finite form constructed of me të + participle, one occasionally finds in
contemporary Standard Albanian non-finite constructions composed of një të +
participle, which are used to express a particular action that has taken place or is expected
to take place before the action expressed by the verb in the controlling clause. Like non-
finite constructions with me të, një të constructions may be marked for passive voice, and
their temporal sense is governed by the controlling verb:

TÈ lumbët, o Leks, NJË të IKUR unë nga shtëpia e NJË T’U SHTHURUR gardhi.
‘Bravo, o Leks, ONCE I am GONE from the house, IMMEDIATELY the fence COMES
APART.’

NJË TÈ PARÒ atë, sakaq, edhe nxënësit e tjerë filluan të lëviznin. ‘Having seen
(‘ONE SEEING’) him, immediately the other pupils as well began to move.’

E patë si u dojë mbërënë depoja e armikut? NJË TÈ MARRË flakë dhe u bë shkumb
e hi. ‘Did you see how the depot of the enemy burned down last night? Once it caught
fire (‘ONE TAKEN flame’) it was reduced to cinders and ashes.’

2.3.6 A.3b. Participial Absolutes
2.3.7 Uses of Complex Verb Cores

A. Complex Verb Cores with Auxiliaries and Pseudo-Auxiliaries

The VERB CORE of an Albanian VP may consist of simple (composed of a single word) or complex (composed of more than one word) constructions. Many complex verb cores in Albanian are formed with reformative clitics (morphemes written as separate words but which have no use except as part of a construction with other words):

të laj ‘that I wash’, tê laj a ‘that I used to wash’, duke larë ‘while washing’, pa larë ‘without washing’, u lava ‘I washed myself’, u lakam ‘I actually wash myself’, etc.

The construction do plus tê plus VERB as in do tê shkoj ‘I will go’ has special importance in Albanian, in that it is basic to the most usual expressions of the future tense and the conditional mood.

A verb as first element of a complex construction whose second element is a participle form is called an auxiliary. Complex verb cores are constructed with the auxiliary verb jam and kâm:

kam larë ‘I have washed’, kisha larë ‘I had washed’, pata larë ‘I had washed’, paskam larë ‘I have actually washed’, paskësha larë ‘I had actually washed’; jam larë ‘I have been washed’, isha larë ‘I used to be washed’, qeshë larë ‘I had been washed’, qenkam larë ‘I have actually been washed’, qenkësha larë ‘I had actually been washed’, etc.

A.1 Perfect Tenses

The verb jam is most often used in Albanian as a semantically neutral copula to relate a subject to a predicate. As a copula it serves to predicate a quality or characteristic of a subject when the predicate is adjectival (or adverbial), or to identify or equate the subject with a nominal complement:

ÈSHTË një mjek, plotësol infermierja. ‘He IS a doctor, the nurse added.’
MÈ vonë do të dalësh një ditë, po së paku TÊ JESH i shëndoshë. ‘Later you will leave some day, but you should at least BE healthy’.

As we have already seen, however, jam also serves as an auxiliary in compound tenses of Albanian, like kam, appearing immediately before the participle of the main verb to form the perfect tenses: e.g., kam larë ‘I have washed’, jam larë ‘I have been washed’, kisha larë ‘I had washed’, isha larë ‘I had been washed’.

A.2 Obligatives

The verb dua ‘I want’ in third person non-active forms may also be used as an auxiliary to form non-active OBLIGATIVES:

Kjo këmishë do (or duhet) larë. ‘This shirt needs washing’.
E po DUHET FILLUAR! tha ai pa lëvizur. ‘Well one must begin! ("IT SHOULD BE STARTED!") he said without moving.’
As komandanti Rrapo nuk flliste. Gjer në xhade DUHEJ ECUR një orë. ‘Not even commander Rrapo was talking. One HAD TO WALK an hour to reach the highway.’

When the subject is plural, non-active third person plural forms of duhet may occur in such constructions, but the corresponding active third person plural forms of do do not so occur:

Ata jënjë djem të mirë dhe DUHEN NDIHMUAR. ‘They are good boys and SHOULD BE HELPED.’

When followed by the perfect subjunctive, the verb duhet commonly expresses a supposition.
Chapter 2

Verbs and Verbal Phrases

DUHET TË KEM QENË atëherë uja gjashtë-shtatëmbëdhjëtë vjec. 'I MUST HAVE BEEN then about 16-17 years old'.

NOTE:

When it is immediately followed by a noun or pronoun that serves as its subject, the verb duhet does not have the same modal value, but instead has the value of a regular verb, usually in the sense 'is needed', rather than the literal 'is wanted'. As such it may be used not only in the third person singular, but also in the other persons.

Domosdo DUHET një qeni që ta mbajë skuadrën me fjalë. 'Of course someone IS NEEDED to amuse the squadron.'

Të rroshi ti sa malet, bër, -i thashë-sepse l DUHESH tërë Shqipërisë, tërë populit, i DUHESH edhe botës. "May you live as long as the mountains, son," I said to him, "because all of Albania, the whole population NEEDS you, even the world NEEDS you."

The auxiliary do followed by the participle of a main verb expresses the meaning of non-active necessity (though somewhat milder than duhet, and more like English IS TO BE, SHOULD BE or OUGHT TO BE constructions), and is used only in the third person singular of the present tense. This construction is more common in the colloquial language, but does occur in literary Albanian as well:

Vrulli i tyre vetëm DO DREJТUAR, DO MBëRTHYER në vendin e duhur e atëherë ai do të bëjë cudira. 'Their drive only NEEDS DIRECTING, NEEDS NAILING DOWN in the proper place and then it will perform miracles.'

A pseudo-auxiliary is also followed by a non-finite verb construction, but unlike a true auxiliary, other material may intervene. The verbs jam and kam may both be used as pseudo-auxiliaries followed by infinitive constructions of the type për të laret 'to wash', expressing the modal meaning of necessity in a somewhat softer form than with duhet and do. Note that this is the same construction that is to express future. The strength of its modal sense depends on the context:

Po kjo s’duhet të na bëjë ne të mbyllim gojën edhe kur s’ESHTË Për TË MBYLLUR. 'But this shouldn’t make us shut our mouth even when it OUGHT not TO BE SHUT.'
MËnaya me të cilën u fitua beteja e Nartës, ËSHTË Për TË Vënë RE, SE... 'The manner in which the battle of Narte was won, IS TO BE NOTED, BECAUSE...'
Al pshërëtë sikur të KISHTË përpara një punë Për TË BËRë. 'He sighed as if he HAD a job TO DO.'

Jam also serves as a pseudo-auxiliary with gerundives to form the present and imperfect progressive as in jam duke laret ‘I am (in the process of) washing’, isha duke laret ‘I was (in the process of) washing’.

The verbs bëhem ‘I become’ and mbetët ‘it remains’ (mbetet only in the third person singular) may also be followed by infinitives of the type për të laret:

Kur U BëNë nprit për të martuar, gjyshi mori trastën e mori shkopin dhe u nis për udhë. ‘When the nephews were old enough to marry ("BECAME what was required to marry"), the grandfather picked up his bag and walking stick and set off on the road.'
Kur menduan se u KISHIN MBETUR edhe gjashtë të tjerë për të dëgjuar, njërëzit s’u përmbajtën dot më. ‘When they realized that there still REMAINED six others to be heard, the people could no longer retrain themselves.'

A.3 Inchoatives

A complex construction expressing an INCHOATIVE aspect is formed with jam as a pseudo-auxiliary (in the present or imperfect) plus the preposition në or me plus the clitic të /frplus the participle, optionally followed by the phrase e sipër ‘and above, beyond’, is used with a kind of inchoative aspektual value similar to English about to...:
Tanush Topia mezi po e mbante ushrinë e tij, e cila ISHTE MË TË THYER E SIPËR. ‘Tanush Topia was barely keeping his army together, which was on the verge of being defeated (“WAS AT BREAKING AND ABOVE”).’

Skënderbeg po kthehej në Berat; meqenëse-të njëmbëdhjetë ditët ISHIN MË TË MBARUAR E SIPËR. ‘Scanderbeg was returning to Berat, being that the eleven days were about to end (“WERE AT FINISHING AND ABOVE”).’

A.4 Verbal Augmentatives

In order to express the progressive increase of an action, the verb vij ‘come’ (usually in the third person) is used as a pseudo-auxiliary followed by a gerundive construction, or is preceded by the conjunction sa ‘ever, more and more’, and followed by a verb coordinated with it by the conjunction e or dhe ‘and’:

Ia vuri edhe një herë dorën në ballë e tha se temperature VINTE DUKE RËNË. ‘He put his hand once more on his forehead, and said that the temperature was falling MORE AND MORE.’

NOTE

This idea may also be conveyed by a construction consisting of sa ‘ever’ plus vij ‘I come’ plus an action verb coordinated with e or dhe ‘and’:

Buçima SA VINTE E ZGJEROHEJ dhe përrenjtë në të dy anët e xhaðesë oshëtinin. ‘The roar WAS BECOMING EVER WIDER and the brooks on both sides of the road were echoing.’

A.5 Verbal Limitives

To express termination of (or satiation with) an action, Albanian uses constructions of the type mbarova së foluri ‘I finished speaking’. The first constituent in this type of sequence is generally a form that denotes actions reaching a limit (including verbs like mbaroj ‘I finish’, pushoj ‘I stop’, lodhem ‘I get tired’, ngopem ‘I get satiated’, vdes ‘I die’, bie ‘I fall’), followed by an invariable clitic se plus a participle with the suffix i (originally a deverbal neuter noun in the ablative indefinite).

Profesor Llazar, që e kish zakon të shtonte domosdo djëka, kur MBARONTE SË FOLURI ndonjë tjëtër, shtet. ‘Professor Llazar, who had a habit of adding something without fail when someone WOULD FINISH SPEAKING, added...’

Gëjthë atë ditë njërëzit, nuk PUSHUAN SË MBLLEDHURI gjithëtarë materialesh. ‘That very day the people, did not stop collecting all sorts of materials.’

Zef Moisui KISHTË MBARUAR SË REFERUARI shkurt mbi situatën politike të brendshme e të jashtme. ‘Zef Moisi HAD FINISHED REPORTING briefly on the domestic and foreign political situation.’

Kur MBAROI Ndoni SË RRËFYERI ato që ngjanë me rosat në grurë, Leksi zuri kokën me duar. ‘When Ndoni FINISHED TELLING what happened with the ducks in the wheat, Leki grabbed his head (with his hands).’

Vjen një ditë që ne PUSHOJMË SË EKZISTUARI. ‘A day comes when we STOP EXISTING.’

Note that in these limitive constructions the former ablative case noun has lost its nominal functions; like other verbal constructions, this one may take an object (if the underlying participle was formed from a transitive verb) and may be modified by adverbial, rather than adjectival, modifiers. In case form it is invariable, and it has lost the syntactic relations of the noun: it is not accompanied by nominal qualifiers or quantifiers, and can be qualified only by another noun functioning as an object, by an adverb or by a word group with an adverbial function, thus largely taking on the syntactic characteristics of a verb form:
Chapter 2

Verbs and Verbal Phrases

Rrga e shtruar zgjati mjaf dhe Rexha s’pushoi SË HEDHURI herë pas here nga një fjialë. ‘The paved road stretched on and Rexha did not cease TOSSING IN a word from time to time.’

As Adili s’po ngapoje dot atë ditë SË SHIKURARI këtë fushë të gjerë. ‘Even Adili could get his fill of LOOKING at this broad field on that day.’

B. Complex Verb Cores with Semi-Auxiliaries

In certain types of complex verb constructions the first element may be a verb with a specialized function (and in some cases with a specialized form) and the second element is a present or imperfect subjunctive verb form. The first element of such a construction is called a semi-auxiliary. Semi-auxiliaries include: do and le, specialized third person forms of the verbs dua ‘I want’ and të ‘I let’, respectively; modal verbs; and verbs which are used to express aspect.

B.1 Future and Conditional

The clitic do is used in complex constructions with a following subjunctive form of a main verb as the normal future tense and conditional mood forms of that verb. Note that do is invariable in such constructions, and that the person, number, and voice of the construction is determined by the verb in the subjunctive.

a) The FUTURE tense, when the following verb is in a present subjunctive form: do të shkoj ‘I shall go’, do të qeshin ‘they will laugh’, do të laheni ‘you will wash yourselves’, do të mbaj ‘he will hold’, do të bëhesh ‘you will become’, do të takohemi ‘we shall meet’, do të jesh ‘you will be’. The FUTURE PERFECT TENSE is composed of a future tense form of kám (active) or jam (non-active) plus the participle of the given verb: do të kem larë ‘I shall have washed’, do të jem larë ‘I shall have been washed’.

b) The CONDITIONAL mood, when the following verb is in an imperfect subjunctive form: do të shkoja ‘I would go’, do të qeshnin ‘they would laugh’, do të laheshit ‘you would wash yourselves’, do të mbante ‘he would hold’, do të bëheshe ‘you would become’. The PERFECT CONDITIONAL is a past tense form composed of a conditional form of kám (active) or jam (non-active) plus the participle of the given verb: do të kisha shkuar ‘I would have gone’, do të kishin qeshur ‘they would have laughed’, do të ishit larë ‘you would have washed yourselves’, do të kishte mbajtur ‘he would have held’, do të ishe bërë ‘you would have become’, do të ishim takuar ‘we would have met’, do të kishe qënë ‘you would have been’.

B.2 Jussives

The clitic le is used in complex constructions with a following first or third person, present subjunctive form of a main verb as the normal JUSSIVE mood of that verb: le të shkojmë ‘let’s go’, le të shkojnë ‘let them go’.

B.3 Modals

Modal verbs express the attitude of the speaker toward the action named by the following in respect to its possibility or necessity. The modals in Albanian are mund ‘can, could’ and duhet (or lipset) ‘should, ought’.

The semi-auxiliary mund, when it expresses its modal meaning of possibility or permissibility, has an invariable form for all persons, when used with the meaning of present, imperfect, or future:
Verbs and Verbal Phrases

However, when it is used in the past definite or in one of the compound tenses, the modal mund varies in form to reflect the subject, as in:

Dy prej tyre, pasi MUNDËN tê shpëtonin nepër pyje, u bashkuar me karadakun dhe erdhën në brigadë. ‘Two of them, after they MANAGED to survive in the forests, joined with Karadak and came to the brigade.’

Ai nuk KA MUNDUR akoma tê diktojë qëllimin tonë. ‘He HAS not yet BEEN ABLE to detect our purpose.’

Ne MUNDËM tê kalonim, megjithëse tê lodhur, të këputur. ‘We MANAGED to pass, even though tired, exhausted.’

Ate ditet nuk kishite agrënë as drekë, sepse ekonomati nuk KISHTE MUNDUR t’i furnizonte me ushqim. ‘That day he had not even eaten lunch, because the steward’s office HAD not BEEN ABLE to furnish them with food.’

NOTE

When it is not followed by a verb in the subjunctive mund does not carry modal value and is used with its full lexical meaning as a regular verb ‘I defeat’:

Nga kohë kur romakët MUNDËN Teuta dhe zotëruan detin, shqiptarët u detyruan të mbështeteshin me shpatulat në male. ‘From the time that the Romans DEFEATED Teuta and dominated the sea, the Albanians were forced to fall back on the mountains.’

The semi-auxiliary duhet, which expresses the modal meaning of necessity or compulsion, is used chiefly in the present and imperfect, and usually only in an invariable third person singular form, no matter what the person and number of the subject is:

Une duhet të shkoj. ‘I must leave.’
Ju duhet ta mbaroni. ‘You should finish it.’
Marrëveshja DUHET TË MBETET midis nesh. ‘The agreement MUST REMAIN among us.’
Njeri prej të dyve DUHEJ TË THYEJ. ‘One of the two HAD TO BE BROKEN.’

Several verbs are used in complex constructions to express the beginning or continuation of the action named by the following verb.

B.4 Inceptives

In addition to the verbs fillej and nis, which always mean ‘start’ or ‘begin’, the verbs zë ‘I start’ bëj ‘I make’, marr ‘I take’, vihém ‘I place myself’, and others may be followed by a subjunctive form of the main verb to signal the beginning of an action:

Hëna e bukur, që sapo FILLOI TË DILTE, shkëlqeu në zallin e Përroit të Thatë. ‘The beautiful moon, which HAD just BEGUN TO RISE, shone on the bed of Dry Brook.’

Armiku FILLOI TË RRÎHTË me artilleri që nga Greshica. ‘The enemy BEGAN TO POUND with artillery all the way from Greshica.’

E mori djalin prançë, i mbështeti kokën në gjinjët e vet e NISI T’I LËMONTE flokët. ‘She drew the boy close, rested his head on her lap, and STARTED TO STROKE HIS hair.’

Prandaj, kur FILLOI TË LIDHTË plagën, ZURI TA PADISTE një zë nga brenda.
‘That is why, when HE STARTED TO BIND the wound, an inward voice BEGAN TO ACCUSE HIM.’

BËRI TË IKTE nga dera. ‘HE MADE (as if) TO GO through the door.’

Simoni u çua përmjërëhe, si i trembr, nga karrikja dhe MORI TË DILTE. ‘Simon got up at once from the chair, as if frightened, and STARTED TO GO OUT.’

Pa humbur kohë, ai U VIU TË NDIJTE armikan. ‘Without losing any time, he set off (‘WAS PLACED’) TO PURSUE the enemy.’

In colloquial Albanian, and sometimes in the written language as well, the verb zê ‘begin’ may be linked to a verb in the indicative mood, by the conjunction e or dhe ‘and’:

Unë akoma qeshja me të madhe, e kur thashë se ‘mamane e kam në Elbasan,’ ZUNË njerëzit E më VËSHTRONIN me dhemshuri. ‘I was still laughing uproariously, and when I said ‘my mother is in Elbasan’, the people BEGAN TO LOOK at me with sympathy.’ (Compare English While I was talking, he up and hit me.)

B.5 Continuatives

The verbs vazhdoj ‘continue’ and viloj ‘keep on’ followed by another verb in the subjunctive are the chief means of indicating continuation of an action:

Bile u rrëzua nje herë, u rrokurullis nëpër bar, por prapë VAZHDOI TË VRAPONTE, deri sa u zdhuk thellë në korie. ‘Indeed, he fell down once, rolled over in the grass, but still kept (‘CONTINUED’) RUNNING, until he disappeared deep in the grove.’

Ai ishte ulur këmbëfryq dhe nuk po viate re që djali VIONTE TË RRINTE ë gjunjë. ‘He sat crosslegged and did not notice that the boy CONTINUED TO REMAIN on his knees.’

C. Complex Verb Cores in Hypothetical Constructions

A full hypothetical sentence consists of an antecedent (‘if’) and a consequent (‘then’) clause. In Albanian (and other languages) the antecedent clause may often be represented by an adverbial expression (such as the adverb ndryshë ‘otherwise’, a prepositional phrase introduced by me ‘with’ or pa ‘without’), or may be absent completely. If the hypothesis is absolutely straightforward, that is, if the speaker presents the antecedent and consequent without reservations, the verb in the antecedent clause will be in the appropriate tense of the indicative mood following a conjunction like po ‘if’, nëqoftëse ‘in case, which may be shortened to në ‘if’ or (in particularly laconic language) even nothing, and the verb in the consequent clause will be in the appropriate tense of the indicative. If the conjunctive phrase is an expression like nëqoftëse or në, the clause is called CONDITIONAL; if it is an expression like edhe në ‘even if’, the clause is called CONCESSIVE.

Nëqoftëse vjen ai, unë iki. ‘In case he comes, I leave.’

or

Në vjen ai, unë iki. ‘If he comes, I leave.’

or

Vjen ai, iki unë. ‘He comes, I leave.’

Po erdhì dje, atëhere jemi në bela. ‘If he came yesterday, then we are in trouble.’

NOTE

In straightforward antecedents the optative of any verb may appear after në. In everyday speech qoftë ‘may it be’ is the most common optative form so used, so much so that nëqoftëse has become one of the two most common ways of saying ‘if’ (the other is po të).

If the speaker recognizes the possibility of some other antecedent, but the hypothesis is still straightforward, the antecedent verb will be in the present subjunctive or, if the antecedent
is prior to the reference point, will be in the perfect subjunctive, following po 'if': po tê mbarojë 'if he finish', (po) tê vinë unë 'if I come', (po) tê ketë mbaruar 'if he have finished', po tê kem ardhur 'if I have come'.

Other optative forms of jam and kam, and to a smaller extent the optative forms of other verbs, are also used in straightforward antecedents after në, so that hypothetical sentences like the following are encountered not infrequently:

Në paça kohë, do tê shkoj. 'If I have time, I'll go.'
Në shkoftëshës, do tê të thërras. 'If I go tomorrow, I'll call you.'

Before verbs in the past definite indicative tense, antecedents presupposed to be completed in the past time may be formed. Note that the conjunction po must be used instead of në with the past definite. Contrast the following three hypothetical sentences, the first two with indicative verbs, the third with a subjunctive verb:

Po erdhë dje, jemi në bela. 'If he came yesterday, we are in trouble.'
Në vinte dje, duhet të na njofonte. 'If he was coming yesterday, he should have told us.'
Po tê vinte nësër, do tê ishim në bela. 'If he were coming tomorrow, we would be in trouble.'

If the speaker recognizes the possibility of another consequence, but the hypothesis is still straightforward, the consequent verb will also be in the present subjunctive or, if the consequent is prior to the reference point, will be in the perfect subjunctive, either following do 'will' or not: do tê mbarojë 'he will finish', do tê vinë unë 'I will come', do tê ketë mbaruar 'he will have finished', do tê kem ardhur 'I will have come'.

Putting the antecedent and consequent clauses together, or omitting the antecedent clause as such, the following full or incomplete straightforward hypothetical sentences with minimal doubt about the hypothesis on the part of the speaker, are all possible in Albanian:

Po tê mbarojë ai, do tê vinë unë. 'If he finishes, I will come.'
Do tê vinë unë, 'I will come.' ('If' clause understood.)
Ndryshe, do tê mbarojë unë. 'Otherwise, I will finish.'
Po tê kem mbaruar unë, do tê ketë ardhur ai. 'If I have finished, he will have come.'
Po tê kem ardhur unë, do tê mbarojë ai. 'If I have arrived, he will finish.'
Sëdoshëtë, unë do tê vij. 'In any case, I will come.'
Po tê vijë ai, unë do tê mbarojë. 'If he comes, I'll finish.'
Në mbaron ai, unë do tê vij. 'If he finishes, I will come.'
Po tê vijë ai, do tê kem mbaruar. 'If he comes, I will have finished.'

If the hypothesis is not straightforward, that is, if the speaker wishes to express doubt about the realization of the antecedent or consequent clause, the verb appears in the imperfect subjunctive or past perfect subjunctive tense. In the antecedent clause the verb may be preceded by a conjunctive like sikur 'if, a if', po 'if', edhe po 'even if' (for concessive clauses); in the consequent clause the verb may be preceded by do (in which case the English equivalent is usually 'would'), mund when the English equivalent is 'might' or 'could'), or duhet (when the English equivalent is should). If the past perfect subjunctive rather than the imperfect is used, the English equivalents in the consequent clause are, respectively, 'would have', 'might have' or 'could have', and 'should have':

"Ah! Sikur Të ISHA gjithnjë kaq i qetë, sigurisht se DO TË BËJA dëcka, DO TË DIJA të paktën se çfarë të kuturisja", tha me vete dhe mbyllë sytë për të fjetur një minutë pa kururarë mendimi në koksë. "Ah! If I WERE always so calm, assuredly I WOULD HAVE DONE something, I WOULD at least KNOW what to venture," he said to himself and closed his eyes in order to sleep a minute without any thought at all in his head.

Edhe unë, po tê isha në vendin tënd, kështu DO TË CUJDETHESHA. 'I, too, if I were in your place, WOULD HAVE BEEN AMAZED in the same way.'

108 2.3.7 C. Complex Verb Cores in Hypothetical Constructions
Chapter 2

-- Po pse çuditesh? Të isha unë në vendin tênd, c'do tê beje ti? 'But why are you surprised? IF I WERE in your place, WHAT WOULD you DO?'

NDRYSHES DO TÊ DEDHJEJ gjak më koto edhe përfundimi do Tê ishte një rëbisë më e keqe se e para. 'OTHERWISE, blood WOULD HAVE BEEN SHED in vain, and the end result WOULD HAVE BEEN a worse captivity than the first.'

Pa ndihmën têndë, S'do T'ia Kisha Dalë mbanë kësaj pune. 'Without your help, I WOULD NOT have been seen this job through ('COME OUT beside this job').'

Dinitu morën mendë dhe do Të Kishëte Rënë, po tê mos ishte mbajtur pas pemës së trotuarit. 'Dini became dizzy and WOULD HAVE FALLEN, if he had not held on the the tree on the sidewalk.'

E kuptonte se shumë ditë të tij Mund Të Kishët qenë më të lumturë, po tê kishte punuar më shumë. 'He realized that many of his days MIGHT HAVE BEEN happier, if he had worked more.'

-- E po ja, nënë, kaloi gjysmë ore që ka dalë Kopani. T'i Kishëte ndodhur gjë, do t'i Kishëte ndodhur. Do Të Kishim Dëgjuar armë, bomba. A po jo?

"But look mother, a half hour has passed since Kopan went out. [IF] something HAD HAPPENED TO HIM, IT WOULD HAVE HAPPENED. We WOULD HAVE HEARD firearms, bombs. No?"

-- E pra, Të më kishëte thënë mua t'i bëja dy këmbë druri S'do T'ia Kisha Dalë kurrë mbanë, megjithëse druri është i bindurë, merr ç'do formë që t'i japësh.

"Well, HAD HE TOLD me to make him two wooden legs I WOULD never HAVE COME CLOSE even though the wood is obedient; it takes whatever form you give it."

Pa pritur filloli një zhurmë e gjuruliddi, që mbëse S'do Të Kishëte mbaruar, po tê mos ishte dëgjuar persëri zëri i Dinit, i cili persëri u bëri aq përshtypje të gjithëve, sa mbyllën gojën. 'Suddenly there began a clamor and dispute, that perhaps WOULD NOT HAVE ENDED, if Dini's voice had not been heard again, who again made such an impression on everybody, that they shut up."

NOTE

In proverbs and occasionally in ordinary language, the imperfect indicative is used in the consequent clause of hypothetical sentences:

Të mos kisha ata kalamaj, që po më hanë sytë, Shkoja (= do tê shkoja) edhe unë atje. 'If I didn't have those kids, who are killing me ('eating my eyes out'), I would be going ('was going') there, too.'

2.4 Formation of Verb Stems

According to their source of formation, verb stems in Albanian are simple, derived, compound, or agglutinated stems.

Simple stems are those consisting of a single morpheme. In the citation forms of verbs in a) below, the single-morpheme stem ends in a vowel. In the citations forms in b), it ends in a consonant. Irregular verbs with simple stems are listed in Section 2.2.2 D.

a) la-j 'I wash', mba-j 'I keep, I hold', tha-j 'I dry (something'), ble-j 'I buy', rrëfe-j 'I relate, I tell', gri-j 'I mince, I grind', shi-j 'I thresh', mëso-j 'I learn', krua-j 'I scratch', shua-j 'I erase, I extinguish', lyj-e 'I paint', thye-j 'I break', ndie-j 'I sense, feel'.

b) hap 'I open', mbyll 'I shut', prek 'I touch', qep 'I sew', qesh 'I laugh', ves 'I wear'; fut 'I put, insert', mat 'I measure', qit 'I expel, I shoot', rrît 'I raise (cause to grow)', shëft 'I stroll'; dal 'I go out', marr 'I take', heq 'I pull', mbjell 'I plant', ndjell 'I entice', vjel 'I harvest'; shes/shet 'I sell/you sell, he sells'.

All verb stems which are synchronically unanalyzable in contemporary Albanian may be considered to be simple. Thus, the following stems may be considered as simple even though they can be analyzed diachronically: mburr 'I praise' (from m + burrë), prier 'I tilt, lean'

2.4 Formation of Verb Stems
Verbs and Verbal Phrases

(from për + ier), mpreh ‘I sharpen’ (from për + eh), hartoj ‘I draft’ (from art + o-j).

The roots underlying the stems from which verbs of this type are formed either no longer exist (e.g., ier, eh) or they have a meaning that is far removed from the meaning of the deriva-
tional-stem (e.g. burrë ‘man’; art ‘art’).

Similarly, stems borrowed from foreign verbs (e.g., anulloj, diktoj, procedoj, stigmatizoj, verifikoj) are considered to be unanalyzable in Albanian, even though they may be derived words in the languages from which they are borrowed.

On the other hand the following verbs are not considered to have simple stems:

a) Antonymic pairs of verbs with partially identical stems, such as ngarkoj ‘I load’, shkarkoj ‘I unload’; ngul ‘I thrust in, I implant’; shkul ‘I uproot’, etc. Verbs of this type, whose antonymic sense comes from the contrast of their respective prefixes, can be considered derived words, even though the part of the stem after the prefix does not exist as an independent word in the current language (like English receive, receive, conceive, etc.).

b) Foreign loans that are analyzable in Albanian because the root from which they are derived has also been taken into the language. Such are verbs of the type: autorizoj (autor), industrializoj (industri, industrial), kolektivizoj (kolektiv), kolonizoj (koloni), mikrofilmoj (mikrofilm), neutralizoj (neutral), reklamoj (reklamë), etc.

c) Verbs of the type gëzoj ‘I gladden’, lëmoj ‘I file’, lëvdoj ‘I praise’, etc., in which the stressed vowel of the underlying stem has been reduced to -ë- with the shift in stress created by the suffix -ë. Compare gaz ‘joy, mirth’, limë ‘file’, lavd ‘praise’.

2.4.1 Derived Verb Stems

Derived verb stems are formed chiefly from nouns, from other verbs, and from adjectives and adverbs. There are also a few verb stems formed from other parts of speech (numbers, pronouns, particles) and by onomatopoeia.

Listed in descending order of productivity, derived verb stems are formed:


A. Verb Stems Derived by Suffixation

The suffixes with which the derived verbs are formed are:

1) -o-, -ro-, -so-, -to-, -zo-, -llë-, with which verbs of conjugation I are formed;
2) -os-, -s/-is, -atos, -it-: with which verbs of conjugation II are formed.

Of these, the suffixes -o- and -zo- are the most productive.

A.1 Derivational Suffixes of Conjugation I

The suffixes -ë-, -llë-, -ro-, -së-, -të-, -zo-. The last four suffixes are originally merely extensions of the suffix -ë-, but in this section they will be discussed separately. For all verbs formed with these, the stress shifts to the -ë- of the suffix.

When these suffixes are added to a non-verbal stem, the resulting verbs have meanings related in an unpredictable variety of ways to the meaning of the derivational stem.

Thus, for example, nderoj means ‘I do honor to someone’, lajmëroj ‘I give the news to someone’, arsyejoj ‘I judge by means of reason’, pyllëzoj ‘I create new forests somewhere’, holloj ‘I make (something) thin’, ndryshoj ‘I make (something) different’, etc.
Chapter 2

On the other hand, when these suffixes are added to a verbal stem, they usually give the derived verb an intensive, frequentative, or sometimes causative meaning: nxir-oj, 'I blacken', shtjell-oj 'I unfold, I develop', zbardh-oj 'I whiten', zbut-oj 'I soften', flakë-roj 'I inflame', shkrrif-eroj 'I loosen', shpesh-taoj 'I intensify (do something more frequently)', qelb-ëzoj 'I cause to stink', etc.

a) The suffix -o-

This is the most productive suffix in the Albanian verbal system. A large number of verbs have been formed with this suffix from stems of: 1) nouns, 2) adjectives, 3) adverbs, 4) verbs:

1) arn-oj 'I mend', besoj 'I believe', botoj 'I publish', cenoj 'I offend, I touch', darkoj 'I dine', etc. (from the nouns arn 'patch', besë 'faith', botë 'world', cen 'vice', darkë 'dinner', etc.). Some verbs formed with this suffix appear only in non-active forms: zotohem 'I promise', motohem 'I age', mrekullohem 'I marvel'.

2) cal-oj 'I cause to limp, I limp', fisnikoj 'I enoble', holloj 'I make thin', mjeroj 'I make wretched', etc. (from the adjectives i calë 'lame', fisnik 'noble', i hollë 'thin', i mjërë 'wretched', etc.).

3) afr-oj 'I bring close', ballafaqoj 'I confront', barañosj 'I make equal', bashkoj 'I unite', dyfishoj 'I double', etc. (from the adverbs afr 'near', ballafaqe 'face to face', baras 'equal', bashkë 'together', dyfish 'twofold', etc.).

4) ndal-oj 'I stop', përdoroj 'I handle', shtjelloj 'I develop', etc. (from the verbs ndal 'stop', përdor 'use', shtjell 'I fling, toss', etc.).

**NOTE**
The verbs po-h-oj 'I admit' and mo-h-oj 'I deny' (from the affirmative and negative particles po and mo with an -h- inserted) have also been formed with this suffix, as have dhjetoj 'I tithe' (from the number dhjetë 'ten'), dyshoj 'I doubt' from the expression e kám me dysh, and shumëfishoj 'I increase manyfold' (by analogy from dyshoj 'I double', trefishoj 'I triple').

The suffix is also found in the verb falënderoj 'I thank', which has come from the agglutination of the expression falem ndérít 'thanks'.

b) The suffix -ro-

A relatively restricted number of verbs have been formed from this suffix, chiefly from noun stems. When the derivational stem ends in a consonant, the vowel -ë- is inserted before the suffix:

mish-ë-roj 'I embody', lajm-ë-roj 'I announce', flakë-roj 'I inflame', lavdëroj 'I glorify', etc. (from the nouns mish 'meat, flesh', lajm 'news', flakë 'flame', lavd 'praise', etc.).

**NOTE**
The verbs shqipëroj 'I translate into Albanian', fisnikëroj 'I enoble', shkrrifëroj 'I loosen', and nxiroj 'I blacken', are formed from the adverb shqip in Albanian', the adjective fisnik 'noble', and the verbs shkrrif 'loosen' and nxij 'I blacken', respectively.

c) The suffix -so-

With this suffix, which is not very productive, verbs are formed primarily from nouns, adjectives, and adverbs. When the stem ends in a consonant, the vowel -ë- is inserted before the suffix:

2.4.1 A.1 Derivational Suffixes of Conjugation I
Verbs and Verbal Phrases

Chapter 2

frikë-so-j 'I frighten', vlefe-soj 'I evaluate, I value', vlerë-soj 'I evaluate, I value', (from the nouns frikë 'fear', vlefe 'value', vlerë 'value'); dendësoj 'I make dense', emberësoj 'I sweeten' (from the adjectives i dendur 'dense', i emberë 'sweet'); ngadalësoj 'I slow down', pakësoj 'I decrease', plotësoj 'I fulfill' (from the adverbs ngadalë 'slowly', pak 'little', plot 'full').

NOTE

Asgje-soj 'I annihilate' and tjetërsoj 'I transfer property' have been formed from the indefinite pronouns asgje 'nothing' and tjetër 'other', respectively.

d) The suffix -to-

With this suffix, which is relatively productive, verbs are formed chiefly from nouns: e.g., arke-to-j 'I deposit funds', arsytëj 'I reason', betoj 'I swear in (someone)', copëtoj 'I break up into pieces' (from the nouns arke 'cashbox', arsye 'reason', be 'oath', copë 'bit').

NOTES

1. In treg-ë-toj 'I trade', the -ë- is inserted after a voiced stop.

2. In pushkatoj 'I execute (by rifle fire)', rezatoj 'I radiate', vizatoj 'I design, I draw', -a- appears in place of the final -ë- or -e- in the underlying stem (compare pushkë 'rifle', reze 'beam, ray', vizë 'line'.)

3. The verbs besatohem 'I pledge my word of honor' and robtohem 'I slave, toil' have been formed with this suffix, but are only used in the non-active form. A few verbs have also been formed from other verbs, adverbs and adjectives with this suffix: njoftoj 'I notify', dridh-tohem 'I am terrified', (compare dridhem 'I shiver'); miratoj 'I approve', shqiptoq 'I pronounce' (from the adverbs mirë 'good' and shqip 'Albanian'); shpeshtoj 'I cause to happen more frequently, I intensify', (from the adjective i shpeshtë 'frequent').

e) The suffix -zo-

With this suffix, which has become quite productive, verbs are formed chiefly from nouns, but in some instances from other parts of speech as well, especially adjectives. When the derivational stem ends in a consonant (except those ending in -ër), the vowel -ë- is inserted before the suffix: lëng-ë-zo-j 'I secrete', but motër-zo-j 'I make a sister of'.

1) bulëzon 'it buds', copëzoj 'I cut into pieces', dorëzoj 'I surrender', etc. (from the nouns bulë 'bud', copë 'bit', dorë 'hand', etc.);

2) dyzoj (dy) 'I double (two)', njëzoj (një) 'I unite, join';

3) aktivizoq 'I activate', centralizoq, industrializoj (from the adjectives aktiv, central, industrial). As is apparent from the examples, verbs formed from adjectives with this suffix have their stem extended with the addition of -i-.

NOTE

In bulëzoj 'I flower' and ndajfojëzoj 'I adverbialize', the final -ë- of the stem is weakened to -ë- because of the stress on the suffix. Similarly, in rokëzoj 'I syllabify', the -ë- of the noun stem rokë 'syllable' is reduced to -ë- in the verb stem. The verb belbëzoj, from the adjective i belbë or i belbër 'stammerer' have dropped the final consonant of the adjective.

The verb gunjëzoj 'I bring to one's knees' has been formed from the plural stem gunjë (ë) 'knee(s)'.

f) The suffix -ilo-

A few verbs have been formed from this suffix. Chief ones are (1) onomatopoeic but there are also a few formed from (2) nouns and (3) verbs as well. When the derivational stem ends in a consonant, the unstressed vowels -u- or -ë- appear before the suffix:

112

2.4.1 A.1 Derivational Suffixes of Conjugation I
(1) fěřěloj ‘I beat the wings, I fly’, gurgullon ‘gurgles’, turfullon ‘snorts’ (onomatopeic verbs);

NOTES
1. Several verbs with onomatopeic sources, like bubullin ‘thunders’, hingèllin ‘neighs’, věršēlloj ‘I whistle’, etc. have been formed with the suffixes -līl- and -līl-, which may be considered allomorphs of -lō-.
2. A few rare verbs have been formed with the suffix -lō-: kugěloj ‘I reddens’, shosh-loj ‘I gossip’.

A.2 Derivational Suffixes of Conjugation II

The suffixes from which the derived verbs of conjugation II have been formed include -s/-is, -ōs, -atīls/-atēs, and -īt. The most productive of these are -ōs and -s/-is. The stress is carried by the -o- or -l- of the suffix; for the -s allomorph, the stress remains on stem final -i.

a) The suffix -ōs.

A rather large number of active transitive verbs have been formed with this suffix from noun stems: ajrōs ‘I ventilate’, balsamos ‘I embalm’, bāltos ‘I spatter with mud’, etc. (from the nouns ajr ‘air’, balsam ‘balm, salve’, baltē ‘mud’, etc.).

NOTES
1. Rehatos ‘I make comfortable’ has been formed from the adverb rehat ‘comfort’. Llafos ‘I talk’ is most often used as an active intransitive verb.
2. Many of these verbs have doublet forms with the -ō- suffix: ajrōj ‘I ventilate’, damkoj ‘I brand’, etc.

b) The suffix -s/-is.

This suffix, which no longer seems productive, has two allomorphs. The allomorph -s has been added to noun stems ending in a stressed i: arratis ‘go into exile’, batērdi ‘I ruin’, bezdi ‘I bother’, etc. (from the nouns arrati ‘exile’, batērdi ‘ruin’, bezdi ‘bother’). The verb praps ‘I repulse’ has also been formed with this suffix (from the adverb prap-a ‘behind’).

A limited number of verbs have been formed from nouns with the suffix -is, which is added to nouns not ending in stressed -i; kallaj-is ‘I coat with tin, I solder’, pāj-is ‘I equip’, etc. (from the nouns kallaj ‘solder, tin’, pāje ‘dowery’). Zvarr-is ‘I drag’ has been formed from the adverb zvarrē ‘dragging(ly)’.

NOTES
1. With the exception of leverdis ‘it is advantageous’, rastis ‘it happens’, and pěrrallis ‘I waste time, I dawdle’, all other verbs in this group are transitive.
2. Several -is verbs have doublets with the -ōs suffix: pajs/pajos ‘I equip’, pěrrallis/pěrrallos, vajis/vajos ‘I lubricate’.
3. The suffixes -atīs and -atēs with which a limited number of verbs have been formed (chiefly from nouns), may be considered as extensions of -ōs and -is: armatos ‘I arm’, bojatis ‘I paint’, boshatis ‘I empty out’, and helmatis (helmatoj) ‘I poison’ (from the nouns armē ‘munitions, arm(s)’, bojē ‘paint’, helm ‘poison’, and the adverb bosh ‘empty’).

c) The suffix -īt-.

2.4.1 A.2 Derivational Suffixes of Conjugation II
This suffix, no longer treated as productive, is usually added to noun stems: darev-it 'I make a present', gjobit 'I fine', kopsit 'I button (up)', etc. (from the nouns darevë 'present', gjobë 'fine (penalty)' kopsë 'button', etc.). However, verbs with an onomatopoeic source are also formed from this suffix: cukit 'pecks', murmurit 'murmurs', nanurit 'sings a cradle song', as are the particular verbs capitem 'I begin to walk' and kollitem 'I cough', which are used only in the non-active form. Finally, the verbs ngulit 'I insert, I drive in' and shkoq-it 'I explain' have been formed from the derived verbs ngul 'I implant' and shkoq 'I stuck, detach' by the addition of the -it- suffix.

NOTES
1. The verbs gati-t 'I prepare' and përsëri-t 'I repeat' have been formed from the adverbs gati 'ready' and përsëri 'again' by the addition of the suffix -it and the elision of one of the -i-'s.
2. For verbs with an onomatopoeic source, such as dërdë-llit 'twaddles', krakë-llit 'crackles', and mjau-llit 'meows', the suffix -it is extended with -ll-.

B. Verb Stems Derived by Prefixation

The productive prefixes in verb derivation are për- and shç/-sh-. Other prefixes include: s-/z-, n-, m-, më-, mbi-, nën-, stër-, shpër-; and de-.

1) The prefix për-

A relatively large number of verbs have been derived with this prefix, chiefly from nouns and other verbs. The prefix may occur before verbs of all conjugations, e.g., për-caktoj 'I define', për-hap 'I spread', për-mbyt 'I flood', etc.

The prefix për- gives to verbs derived from verbs:

a) an intensification of the meaning of the non-prefixed form: përcaktoj 'I define', përcap 'I chew', përdredh 'I twist', etc.;

b) a new intensive meaning related to the meaning of the source verb: për-blauj 'I brood over/blauj 'I mill', përfitoj 'I profit/fitoj 'I win', përfshiq 'I include/fshiq 'I sweep', etc.

c) a new meaning more distantly related to the meaning of the source verb: përçmoj 'I scorn', çmoj 'I value', përvesh 'I roll up my sleeves/vesh 'I wear', and përgjigjëm 'I reply/-gjegjem 'I obey, I listen'.

The prefix për- is not and has not been very productive in deriving verbs from noun stems. In verbs with për- prefixed to noun stems that otherwise end in an unstressed -ë, there is no final -ë, since verbs in Standard Albanian canonically may not end in ë: compare buzë 'lip, brink', dorë 'hand' with the verbs përbuz 'I scorn, despise' and përdor 'I use'.

Verbs with the prefix për- have been formed:

(1) From nouns that name a part of the human body, such as ballë 'forehead', buzë 'lip', dorë 'hand', kráh 'arm', giunjë 'knees', shtat 'body': përball 'I confront', përbuz 'I despise', përdor 'I use', përkrah 'I support', përgjunj 'I cause to kneel', përshtat 'I adapt'. The verb përmend 'I mention, remind' also belongs to this group (from mend 'mind'). These verbs can indicate an action that is completed by activating in one way or another the thing named by the derivational stem. However, they are more commonly used with an extended meaning different from their original meaning:

(2) From nouns that name substances, such as baltë 'mud', gjak 'blood', hi 'ashes', jargë 'spittle', mjaltë 'honey': përbalt 'I soil with mud', përgjak 'I cause to bleed', përhij 'I spatter with ashes', përjarg 'I slober', përmjalt 'I sweeten with honey'. These verbs also indicate an action that is realized by putting into action the thing named by the derivational stem. These actions may also be expressed through the verb bëj 'I do, I make', plus an instrumental complement constructed of the preposition me 'by, with' and the noun from which the verb is formed: përbalt = bëj me baltë; përmjalt = bëj me mjaltë, etc.
Chapter 2

Verbs and Verbal Phrases

(3) From nouns with various meanings, such as fill ‘thread’, shëndet ‘health’, udhë ‘road’: përhull ‘(I) consider’, përshëndet ‘(I) greet’, përudh ‘I guide’.

NOTES

1. The verb përshëndosh ‘I greet’ is formed with this prefix from the adjective i shëndoshë ‘robust, strong’.

2. Për- is also used to form the verbs për-fyt-em ‘I scuffle’, për-lesh-em ‘I come to blows, I scuffle’, për-lot-em ‘I cry (become tearful)’, për-miell-em ‘I get sprinkled with flour’, and për-ves-em ‘I become wet with dew’. These verbs are only used in the non-active form.

3. A certain number of verbs apparently derived with this prefix are actually agglutinations of a prepositional phrase with the preposition për. Such are, for example, the verbs përkrah ‘I support’ and përshtat ‘I adjust’.

b) The prefix sh-/ç/-zh-


Verbs derived from other verbs by this prefix have:


NOTE

Zbuduk is a back-formation from zbudkem ‘I disappear’, which itself comes from dukem ‘I appear’.


NOTE

The verbs shpërragul ‘(1) displace’ and shpërthej ‘I erupt’ may be considered to have been formed with the compound prefix shpër- (from sh-+për-).

A few verbs have also been formed from nouns with the prefix sh-/ç/-zh-. If the underlying stem ends in an unstressed -ë or -e (e.g., pëkë ‘point, drop’, faqe ‘cheek, page’, kërë ‘kernel, grain’), this vowel is deleted since polysyllabic verbal stems cannot end in -ë or -e preceded by a consonant: shfaq ‘manifest, express’, shkoq ‘detach, shuck’, shpik ‘invent’; çmend ‘madden’, çmallem ‘I satisfy my longing’ (this last verb is used only in the non-active form). With the exception of the verb shfaq, the prefix sh-/ç- has a privative meaning. Thus, shkoq means ‘remove the grains from an ear (of cereal)’, shpik ‘drink to the last drop’, çmend ‘drive out of one’s mind’, çmallem ‘remove my longing for my family and friends’.

c) The prefix z-/s-.

This prefix, which is not very productive, has two forms, z- and s-, of which z- is more common. The form z- is used before voiced consonants, as in zgjat ‘I lengthen’, zbuloj ‘I discover, I uncover’, etc., while the form s- is used before voiceless ones, as in skuaq ‘I make red’, spastraj ‘I clean up, etc. Verbs derived chiefly from verbs and adjectives have been formed with this prefix.

2.4.1B. Verb Stems Derived by Prefixation
The prefix gives verbs derived from other verbs:

1. An intensive meaning: skuaq, spastroj, spraps (or zmbrops) ‘I push back, repulse’.


Verbs formed by this prefix from adjectival stems have a causative sense: skuaq ‘I reddern’, zbardh ‘I whiten’, zbut ‘I soften’, zgjat ‘I lengthen’, zverdh ‘I make pale’, which can be semantically expanded to ‘I make (something) red, white, soft, long, yellow’, respectively.

d) The prefix n-/m-

This prefix, which is not very productive, has the forms n- and m-. The form m- is used before the labial consonants -b- and -p-; elsewhere n- appears.

A limited number of verbs, the derivational stems of which are not encountered as independent words, have been formed with this prefix. The identification of the prefix in verbs of the type ngul ‘drive in’, mbuloj ‘I cover’, etc. is thus apparent only through contrast with a corresponding antonym such as shkul ‘I yank, uproot’, zbuloj ‘I uncover’, etc.


NOTES

1. The verbs mbrouj ‘I knead’/zbrouj ‘I tenderize’ are not antonymous.

2. For antonymous pairs of the type ndrydh/shtrydh, voicing of the initial voiceless stop of the underlying stem to -d-, -g-, -g- is caused by the preceding sonorant consonant -n-.

e) The prefixes mbi- and nên-

A few verbs derived only from other verbs have been formed with these antonymous prefixes. Verbs formed with the prefix mbi- ‘over’ indicate an action that stands higher, exceeds, or is superior to the action expressed by its underlying derivational stem: e.g., mbicmoj ‘I overvalue’, mbingarkoj ‘I overload’, mbikyru ‘I supervise’, mbivlefej ‘I overestimate’, mbivlerës ‘I overestimate’, mbizotërroj ‘I predominate’.

On the other hand, verbs formed with the prefix nên- ‘under’ indicate an action that stands lower than, is insufficient, or is subordinate to the action expressed by the derivational stem: nêncmoj ‘I undervalue’, nêngsq ‘I smile’, nênvlefej ‘I underestimate’, nênvlerës ‘I underestimate’.


f) The prefix ndër-

A small number of verbs derived from other verbs have been formed with this prefix, e.g., ndërhyj ‘I interfere’, ndërldh ‘I connect’, ndérmar ‘I undertake’, ndérpres ‘I cut off, disrupt’. This prefix gives verbs various semantic connotations: e.g., ndërhyj ‘intervene’ connotes ‘I get mixed up in an affair other than my own’.

g) The prefix ri-

This prefix, which has become quite productive in written Albanian, occurs only before verbs. Verbs formed with this prefix designate an action that is being performed again, like the English prefix re-: riarmatos ‘I re-arm’, ribotoj ‘I reprint’, rifilloj ‘I begin anew’, etc.
In some cases, the prefix ri- also expresses some other semantic nuance, such as ripunoej 'I rework = I work at it once more in order to improve it', rivendos 'I replace = I put it again in its former place', rivleftesoj 'I assign (to money) a new value'.

h) The prefix stër-

A few verbs have been formed with this prefix, which expresses semantic enlargement or excess: stërholoej 'I go into excessive details', stërmundej 'I exhaust (someone)'.

This prefix is also used in expressions of the type e mata dhe e stërmata 'I measured it over and over again', u njohem 'we became acquainted', dhe u stërnjohem 'we got to know each other more and more', etc. to describe an action repeated to excess.

NOTES

1. There are also other non-productive prefixes, such as: më- as in mëkëmb 'I cause to recover', mësij 'I attack', mëkoj 'I feed (a helpless being)', shp- as in shplaj 'I rinse'; tër- as in tërheq 'withdraw'.

2. In the literary language there are also a number of borrowings of the type decentralizaj, degradoj, dekompozej, demaskoj, demoralizej, deshifraj, etc., in which we can identify a prefix de-, which gives these verbs a meaning opposite to that of the corresponding borrowed derivational stem centralizoj, gradoj, etc.

C. Verbs Derived by Simultaneous Prefixation and Suffixation

A number of derived verbs have been formed by simultaneously adding prefixes and suffixes to derivational stems, the majority of which are nouns, but a few of which are adjectives and other parts of speech.

The suffixes that take part in the formation of verbs of this type are mainly -o-, -so-, and -zko-, from which verbs of conjugation I are formed: e.g., përfundoj 'I conclude', përjetesoj 'I perpetuate, immortalize', shfrytëzoj 'I exploit'.

Among verbs of conjugation II we have only nguros 'I petrify', çmorrit 'I de-lice', and përtërit 'I renew, reinvigorate'.

In the formation of verbs of this type, the prefixes për- and sh/-ç/-zh- are the most common.

1) Verbs of the type për + derivational stem + suffix

Two subgroups are distinguished here:

a) për + noun stem + -ô: përfundoj 'I conclude', përgënjështroj 'I deny', përmalloj 'I move (others) emotionally', përqafoj 'I embrace'.

b) për + noun stem (pronominal or adjectival stem) + -sô: përfaqësoj 'I represent', përjetesoj 'I perpetuate', përgjithësoj 'I generalize, universalize', përvetësoj 'I appropriate, assimilate', përmirësoj 'I improve'.

NOTE

The verbs përjetësoj, përvetësoj, and some others, have been formed by agglutination of the prepositional phrase për jetë 'for life', për vete 'for self' and addition of the suffix -so-.

2) Verbs of the type sh/-ç/-zh- + derivational stem + suffix:

a) sh- + noun stem + -zô: shfronësoj 'I dethrone', shfrytëzoj 'I exploit';

b) sh/-ç- + noun stem + -sô/-ô: shkripësoj 'I de-salinate', shpronësoj 'I expropriate', shfletoj 'I leaf through', clyrësoj 'I de-grease, remove fat'.
Verbs and Verbal Phrases

Chapter 2

c) zh- + noun stem + -ë/-ë: zhdoganëj ‘I clear (at customs)’, zhgjakësoj ‘I reconcile (bloodfeuding parties)’, zgjeroj ‘I broaden’.

NOTE

In addition to these, there are other verbs that have been formed with both prefixes and suffixes, such as: nënëvësaj ‘I underscore, I underline’, pavdekësoj ‘I immortalize’, riatëhosaj ‘I repatriate’, nguros ‘I petrify’, çmorrët ‘I de-lace’, përtërit ‘I renew, rejuvenate’, (from the nouns vizë ‘line’, atdhe ‘fatherland’, gur ‘stone’, mër ‘louse’, and the adjectival form të ri ‘young’). The verb pavdekësoj is more directly related semantically to the noun pavdekës ‘immortality’.

D. Verb Stems Derived by Conversion

There are also a few verbs in Albanian, for the most part derived from nouns and adjectives, without any derivational affix.

From the structural viewpoint, such verbs may be divided into two groups. The first group includes those verbs that have taken on active forms, such as krip ‘I salt’, shosh ‘I sift’, etc., while the second group includes those verbs that have taken on non-active forms, such as mykëm ‘I become moldy’, kujdesëm ‘I take care, I care for’, etc.

The majority of verbs derived without affixation belong to conjugation II: krip ‘I salt’, qëll ‘I stink’, shosh ‘I sift’, ndryshëk ‘I rust’, sit ‘I sift’ (all from noun stems); sëmër ‘I make ill’, kuq ‘I redden’, verdh ‘I make pale, yellow’ (all from adjectival stems); as well as përsëdyt ‘I repeat’ (from the adverbial location për ‘së dëtyt ‘a second time’). However, there are also a few verbs of the first conjugation, such as huaj ‘I loan’ and shëlli ‘I salt, I brine’ (from the noun stems huaj ‘loan’ and shëlli-rë ‘brine’).

2.4.2 Verb Stems Formed by Compounding

Verbs with compound stems in Albanian are not numerous. Chief among them are qualifying constructions of the type verb + verb. In addition, there are some verbs compounded of a noun and a verb.

The most common compound verb stems are those whose first constituent is the adverb bashkë ‘together’ or para ‘before’: bashkëbisedëj ‘I converse’, bashkëekzistoj ‘I coexist’, bashkëflalosëm ‘I converse (with)’; paraçaktotj ‘I predetermine’, paralajmëroj ‘I forewarn, notify’, paramendotj ‘I premeditate’, etc. In stems of this type, a first constituent bashkë-corresponds to English co-, con- or com-, while a first constituent para- corresponds to English pre-, fore-, or ante-.

In compound verb stems with other circumstantial adverbs as first constituent (e.g., mirë ‘well’, keq ‘badly’, tej ‘beyond, across’), the meaning of this constituent is an abstract or figurative extension of its meaning in ordinary verb phrases: mirëpres ‘I welcome’, mirëndaj ‘I preserve, maintain’, keqkuptej ‘I misunderstand’, keqprërdor ‘I misuse’, tejkaloj ‘I exceed’, etc.

In the compound verbs buzqësht ‘I smile’, duartrokot ‘I applaud’, udhëheq ‘I lead, guide’, rrethshkruaj ‘I circumscribe’, etc., the first constituent (the nouns: buzë ‘lip(s)’, duar ‘hands’, udhë ‘road’, rreth ‘ring, hoop, circle’) complements the action expressed by the second constituent. Thus, buzqësht means ‘laugh with the lips’, duartrokot ‘clap the hands’, and udhëheq ‘lead someone on the road’.

118

2.4.2 Verb Stems Formed by Compounding
2.4.3 Verb Stems Formed by Agglutination

A small number of verb stems originate as phrase agglutinations. The meaning of these agglutinated verbs can be derived directly or indirectly from the meaning of the phrase from which they have been formed: bēzaj ‘I call, call out’ (from bēj za ‘I make sound’, and vērej ‘I observe, notice’ (from vē re ‘pay attention’). Also falēnderej ‘I thank’ and ngjatjetoj ‘I greet’ have come from the agglutination of their respective phrases: falem nderit ‘I pray to the honor, thanks’ and tungjatjeta (from t’u ngjattē jeta) ‘may life be lengthened for you’, plus the suffix -ēj.